

Apocalypse 1181

Chapter 1181

Two islands.

Both of the teams had finished their resting period at the same time.

The Soul Shrieker's side stood in front of the damaged Crossing Fish, trying to come up with a solution.

At the same time, Gu Qing Shan's side was also doing the same.

"I recall that you're able to turn into other creatures?" Zhang Ying Hao commented.

When he turned around, Gu Qing Shan was already nowhere to be seen.

Only a bird flew into the sky, circled around the island once again, then returned to the ground as Gu Qing Shan.

"Not possible, there's an invisible restraining force around us. If I try to fly outside, I'll be struck back; if I still insist on going through, I'll probably be struck down" Gu Qing Shan replied.

He then tried using the technique to expel his soul and have Zhang Ying Hao put his body on the boat, attempting to have all three of them ride the same boat.

The results were the same as it was on the Soul Shrieker's side.

Ye Fei Li couldn't help shaking his head: "Is there really no way to leave the island apart from using this Crossing Fish boat like the notification suggested?"

Gu Qing Shan sighed, then asked: "Does anyone have something else in mind?"

Zhang Ying Hao drew a Card and said: "Let me try"

He tossed the Card forward.

The Card turned into mist, from which a blue lobster half the size of an adult appeared.

「Hurry! Hurry! Hurry! Little Ying Hao, give me a bottle of beer, without alcohol, I'm about to die!」

The blue lobster shouted.

Zhang Ying Hao took out a bottle of beer and gave it to him.

The blue lobster skillfully popped open the cap with his claw, then gulped the entire thing down.

「Bah--」

He burped up the CO₂, then commented in a pleased manner: 「Sure enough, beer is still the best— alright, what did you need me for?」

Zhang Ying Hao pointed at the sea and asked: "Take a look at this sea, do you think you can carry me across?"

The blue lobster stared carefully at the sea; his expression slowly turned solemn.

「 This sea looks like it's hiding a lot more than it lets on, let me see what kind of power it possesses 」
The lobster nimbly made his way down the beach and tried reaching into the water with his big claw.

Crack!

A resounding shattering noise.

「 Ay cha cha cha cha! 」

The blue lobster screamed in pain.

He grabbed his big claw and stumbled back.

“What happened!?” Zhang Ying Hao asked in a serious voice.

The blue lobster displayed his big claw and explained: 「 The water is filled with strange forces, not even my claw was able to handle it and cracked like this, so—— 」

He abruptly stopped.

He noticed that the three people were all staring at the white flesh peeking out from the cracks on his claw, silently swallowing their spit.

——*this lobster was even drinking beer just now.*

If we cook him, he'll probably taste especially good.

The three of them silently thought.

「 Hmph! Listen up, I'll just say that living creatures can't go into the water! 」

The blue lobster was able to sense a certain level of danger, so he left this comment and vanished from their visions.

“He... left” Ye Fei Li said regretfully.

Gu Qing Shan turned to the void of space and asked: “Is this water really that dangerous?”

The Chao Yin sword let out a short vibration.

“Alright, seems like we really can't enter the water...” Gu Qing Shan pondered.

Zhang Ying Hao recalled something, then asked: “Oh yeah, weren't you able to completely vanish somehow? Just like how you unknowingly appeared in the world of the Spire”

Gu Qing Shan sighed: “That ability can only be used at night, and I'm not sure if it'll actually be useful”

——the [Orange Sovereign – Ghostly Shadows of Night] can only be used after night fell.

The three of them had no other ideas.

Time slowly passed.

In the blink of an eye, there were only 10 minutes left.

The Apocalypse was about to arrive.

Ye Fei Li suddenly stood up and walked closer to the boat.

He crouched down motionlessly, then appeared to be listening to something.

Gu Qing Shan and Zhang Ying Hao both stayed silent without saying a word.

———Ye Fei Li had an ability that enabled him to listen to all things.

After listening for a while, he returned and said: “The boat is angry”

“It’s angry? Why?” Zhang Ying Hao couldn’t help but ask.

“It thinks that we’re all ignoring it rather than trying to repair it” Ye Fei Li replied.

“Repair it...”

Gu Qing Shan froze, then recalled that there was a note on the notification:

...

[You may use the trees on the island to repair it, then use it to quickly escape the island]

...

Gu Qing Shan suddenly thought of something.

“Ying Hao, Fei Li, I have other solutions, but since this is an Apotheotic Combat where [Chaos] is trying to test us, these solutions are probably unsuitable”

Please support our website and read on novelbold

“Then what now? Have you come up with something else?” Ye Fei Li asked.

“There’s no time left, [Chaos] told us to repair the boat, then we’re going to follow its rules and do just that, it’ll be the most assured solution”

“Then...”

“Let’s repair the boat”

With a single thought, Gu Qing Shan sent out several strands of sword qi that instantly chopped down the largest trees on the island.

He then used a telekinesis seal to transport all the trees next to the ship.

“Ying Hao, you’re a gun user, so you should be quite used to handling components. Dismantle the damaged portions of the boat and tell me their dimensions” Gu Qing Shan said.

“No problem”

Zhang Ying Hao leapt onto the small boat and began to dismantle the broken pieces of the wooden boat.

Gu Qing Shan then said: “Fei Li, when Ying Hao reports the dimensions, I want you to cut out each component from wood exactly how he measured them, then give them back to Ying Hao to put together— with the three of us, this should be quite quick”

“Ah, alright” Ye Fei Li replied.

Zhang Ying Hao soon finished dismantling the first plank and reported: “First piece on the side of the boat, 4 meters long, 1.2 meters wide”

Ye Fei Li then summoned several red strings from his hand to cut out a piece of plank with those exact measurements in the same shape.

He tossed the new piece of plank to Zhang Ying Hao, who then quickly put it in place.

Gu Qing Shan received the broken piece of plank and stood still.

He silently waited until all broken pieces had been replaced.

“Alright, we’re done repairing, what’s next?” Zhang Ying Hao asked.

“Continue dismantling it” Gu Qing Shan replied.

“Continue dismantling it?” Zhang Ying Hao asked again.

“Yeah, this time, completely”

“Alright”

Zhang Ying Hao couldn’t quite understand what he intended to do, but still continued his work.

Each component of the boat was slowly dismantled.

While Ye Fei Li continued to make new components in accordance with the measurements Zhang Ying Hao provided, then gave it to him to replace the old ones.

Even the accessories on the boat were completely replaced.

—Zhang Ying Hao was already used to handling smaller components for guns, while Gu Qing Shan was an expert Mech designer, so the two of them took a few metal scraps that Zhang Ying Hao carried around, summoned fire to melt them and mold them to look as close to the wooden ship’s original accessories as possible.

Once all the accessories were done, Zhang Ying Hao put the new accessories on the small boat.

While Gu Qing Shan received all of the boat’s old components and accessories.

—-he began to reassemble the old boat.

With their skillful and swift cooperation, they soon replaced every single part of the boat at least once.

A completely new Crossing Fish now floated in front of them.

At the same time, Gu Qing Shan had also finished putting the old broken boat back together.

Two boats.

One old, one brand new.

Both were Crossing Fish.

“You know, if we were to see this from a philosophical perspective, we’d have quite a long debate on our hands” Zhang Ying Hao looked at the two boats and shrugged.

Gu Qing Shan replied: “But from a practical perspective, both of them work”

He then received new planks of wood from Ye Fei Li and replaced the damaged ones.

At this point, there was only 1 minute left.

Gu Qing Shan put his hands on each of the boats respectively.

Lines of glowing text appeared on the War God UI:

[A completely new Crossing Fish]

[This is a unique boat that can traverse the Sea of Deep Mysteries]

[The old Crossing Fish]

[This is a unique boat that can traverse the Sea of Deep Mysteries]

Gu Qing Shan nodded.

“Let’s go!”

The two boats sailed into the boundless ocean one after another.

As if being guided by some sort of outer force, the wooden boats moved forward in the same direction through the sea.

At this point, lines of grey text appeared on all of their [Chaos] UIs:

[Mortals walking on the path to Godhood, you must understand that the mission of Chaos is arduous and tough, which cannot be accomplished necessarily through strength alone]

[Because at the deep of Chaos, your strength is meager at best]

[Your evaluation shall now begin:]

[At the beginning of the Apotheotic Combat, you did not choose the simple method of deciding through strength, nor breaking the rules established by Chaos, instead, you were able to follow the obscure hints to successfully leave the Island of Apocalypse with all three of you]

[Remember well, the ability to think is a crucial part of all creations, only a Deity with a flexible mind can accept the mission of Chaos in a proper manner and reach the true secret of the Era of Chaos.

Otherwise, even if you are the True Deity of Chaos, you would still perish within the countless years]

[Evaluation: Excellent]

[From now on, the speed of your Crossing Fish shall be 30% faster]

[You will reach your destination before your oppositions]

Reading through these notifications, the three of them all fell into thought.

The amount of information it contained was considerable.

All of a sudden, Ye Fei Li called out: "Look!"

The three of them turned towards the island.

Time was up.

The Apocalypse had arrived on the island.

Chapter 1182

A silent, calm sea.

Gu Qing Shan, Zhang Ying Hao, and Ye Fei Li stood on the boat, waiting for a while.

Nothing occurred.

Everything on the remote island was exactly as it was before.

"Oi, where's that Apocalypse you mentioned?" Zhang Ying Hao spread his arms and shouted towards the remote island.

It remained exactly the same.

Gu Qing Shan pondered for a bit before manifesting a small piece of ice from the void of space and flicking it away.

The piece of ice instantly flew the long-distance towards the island's beach.

It crashed into one of the relatively smaller rocks.

Klink!

Numerous cracks appeared on the piece of ice.

It shattered.

At the same time, the entire remote island gave off a series of busy and heavily suppressed noises.

Zi zi zi zi zi zi zi zi zi zi———

The entire island abruptly shattered.

It didn't shatter like a piece of glass into numerous pieces, it simply disappeared.

This disappearance was so sudden and quick that a large vortex was created in the water at its previous location.

A large amount of sea water rushed towards the vortex in order to replace the empty location of the island.

Water was rushing from every direction.

The two Crossing Fish boats were pulled in by the waterflow, unable to move forward for a short while.

It was only after the water surface had settled down that the wooden boats were able to move forward again.

“I’ve never seen this kind of Apocalypse before” Zhang Ying Hao said with a solemn tone.

“Right, it was probably triggered by either the sound waves or the impact, the two objects that caused the impact would be instantly destroyed, then spread in all directions until everything is reduced to fine dust” Ye Fei Li commented with furrowed brows.

——for the moment, he couldn’t come up with any solutions for this Apocalypse.

Gu Qing Shan closed his eyes to examine the residual fluctuations in the void, then muttered: “This power is extraordinary, it can destroy an entire world in the blink of an eye. Quite fortunately, it was limited to the vicinity of that remote island, otherwise, the consequences would have been unimaginable.

“With your current strength, can you stop this Apocalypse?” Zhang Ying Hao asked.

At this point, Gu Qing Shan had fully absorbed the power of three dragons, so he mused: “If I use everything I have, I can probably stop one such attack, but if it’s consecutive, I wouldn’t be able——”

He suddenly shut up.

Both Zhang Ying Hao and Ye Fei Li didn’t try to pursue the question.

All three of them were looking in the direction of the remote island.

They heard a faint sound of someone singing, resounding from the boundless surface of the sea.

A blurred shadowy figure was standing motionlessly at the original location of the island.

It was singing.

——following its singing voice, the seawater retreated in every direction.

The remote island once again reappeared.

However, the island that appeared this time was alive.

It seemed to be the disguise of some sort of creature that silently climbed out from the void of space into the spot left for it in the ocean, then remained still.

No matter how they looked at it, it seemed like a remote island, the exact same remote island they were on before.

The shadowy figure didn’t bother to look at the remote island and looked towards the direction of Gu Qing Shan’s group.

It tried to fly towards them.

Bam!

A thick layer of transparent barrier prevented that.

— the same barrier around the remote island from before!

Gu Qing Shan had tried turning into a bird to fly out from the island; and so did the Raging Flame Traveler, both of them were struck and forced back.

The shadowy figure continued trying for a while, but found that it couldn't leave, then finally landed on the remote island.

It continued its distant song of emptiness.

At this point, Gu Qing Shan's boats had already moved a long distance away from the remote island.

They had finally left.

None of the three people on the boats said anything.

Zhang Ying Hao wiped the cold sweat from his forehead and commented: "That thing just now was terrifying, I felt like I would die just by looking at it"

"Same" Gu Qing Shan calmly replied.

He casually formed a hand seal to dry off the layer of cold sweat all over his body.

Ye Fei Li suddenly asked: "Then, what exactly was it?"

"Who knows, but do you still remember the Game of Eternal? I assume that it was the same kind of existence as the mastermind of the Game of Eternal"

"Then, the Apocalypses were actually being controlled by some sort of entity?" Ye Fei Li asked.

Gu Qing Shan replied: "Not sure. I think the chance to observe a kind of Apocalypse at such a close distance was also a kind of reward for us from [Chaos]"

Zhang Ying Hao said: "You mean—"

"Indeed. Normally, who would ever have a chance to see the true face of an Apocalypse? Including the Game of Eternal, even with it being infinitely weakened compared to before, we never truly witnessed the masterminds behind it" Gu Qing Shan replied.

Zhang Ying Hao shrugged: "Then, in the end, we still don't know what kind of existence was behind it"

Gu Qing Shan said: "Just wait, I'm sure the path that [Chaos] had prepared for us isn't going to be a smooth one. We'll probably come across and discover quite a few secrets after this"

Zhang Ying Hao clapped his hands, then said: "Do you still remember the notification at the start? Every hour, one kind of Apocalypse would descend, which means that we might still have a lot of chances to face more Apocalypses"

Suddenly, Ye Fei Li chimed in: "If this power was to descend on our world..."

The three of them went silent.

A few moments later lines of grey text appeared in front of their visions at the same time:

[From outside the infinite void]

[All calamities and Apocalypses cannot enter the Reality Gate]

[However, some minor Apocalypses would occasionally, be able to infiltrate the void where we are present]

[Apocalypses that could be killed have already been eliminated, Apocalypses that cannot be killed are being imprisoned in a mysterious dimension, while the irresistible Apocalypses are still at large]

[What you witnessed was one kind of Apocalypse, a convict of Chaos]

Ye Fei Li opened his mouth wide, quite reasonably confused: "Apocalypses can be imprisoned?"

Zhang Ying Hao was thinking much further than that and muttered: "If [Chaos] was impressive to this degree, how come it had been gone for so many years until the Soul Shrieker began to spread it again, that doesn't make any sense..."

—-*convict*.

Gu Qing Shan repeated this term.

He was sure that he had heard this use of the term 'convict' before.

I think...

Lin once mentioned this.

But Lin also didn't know about the secret of the convicts.

...

At another location.

The God of Life stood on the highest point of the sunken remote island, her guard up as high as godly possible.

It had been several minutes since the Apocalypse was supposed to descend.

But nothing had happened yet.

She continued to wait until the sun was about to set and finally sighed in relief.

『 It must have been a virus-type Apocalypse or one that required more than one person to trigger, or wouldn't affect a Deity like myself 』

『 It makes sense, the Apotheotic Combat had only just begun, it wouldn't release too many Apocalypses, nor one too powerful to test us 』

She took one step forward.

This step changed everything.

The sound of something shattering resounded throughout the entire island.

Zi zi zi zi zi zi zi zi——

『 OH NO! 』

Please support our website and read on novelbold

The God of Life's expression warped.

She released all of her black tentacles to wrap around herself, forming a black barrier.

At the very moment that she reacted; the entire remote island vanished from the surface of the sea.

Everything on it had turned to fine dust.

——only the God of Life remained.

『 Aaargh! 』

The God of Life exuded a resounding scream of pain.

This attack was so terrifying that she became injured despite reacting to it as quickly as she could.

Large blotches of blood spurted from her black tentacles, they were also falling apart in large chunks.

But the God of Life didn't care about these tentacles.

She was deathly fearful.

『 There are no mistakes, this is... that thing! 』

『 Damn you Soul Shrieker... 』

『 ——convict! A convict is coming! 』

The God of Life muttered in disconnected, frightful words.

All of a sudden, the sound of faint singing resounded from above.

The God of Life started to display a frenzied expression and mumbled to herself: 『 I want to live... I have to live! I can't die right now! 』

She abruptly thrust one hand into her heart cavity.

A still-beating heart was extracted from it.

Badum! Badum! Badum!

It was beating loudly.

The God of Life looked at this heart and madly roared: 『 Death God! Before you disappeared, you once promised me to use all of your divine power to condense a heart, substituting me in death one time! 』

She crushed the heart.

Immediately, another God of Life appeared from the void of space.

『 Ahahaha, I'm saved! Hurry! Quickly transport me back! 』

The real God of Life laughed.

A flash of light descended from above, enveloped her, and whisked her away from this world.

Through the fog, God of Life was continuously flying forward.

She was traversing through the long years and space to return to the place she was summoned from.

—–the battlefield between the Wraith realm and the Eternal Abyss.

She originally led the carriers of [Chaos] to participate in a war against the Abyss.

『 Saved... I'm saved... I can continue to live 』

The God of Life whispered to herself in delight.

She looked around the battlefield.

Several powerful carriers of [Chaos] respectfully remained around her.

『 How long was I gone for? 』 the God of Life coldly questioned.

“True Deity, you only disappeared for around 5 minutes” one carrier of [Chaos] replied.

『 How is the battle? 』

“It will soon come to an end, the Abyss is powerless to resist at all, the people of the Wraith realm had already made their way into the frontlines, while our people remained behind without your orders”

『 Hm 』

The God of Life nodded.

Before she left, the Wraith realm and carriers of [Chaos] had already taken full control of the situation and would soon deal the final blows to the Abyss.

From the looks of it, everything had gone exactly as they all expected.

—–the Apotheotic Combat is truly a path of death, summoning a convict right at the beginning like that, no one could ever win against that.

Regretfully, neither the Soul Shrieker nor its challengers have lived long enough to understand what a convict is.

All of them will die.

The only one who survived will have been me.

While the God of Life was feeling glad about her survival, two carriers of [Chaos] walked up to her and reported:

“True Deity, the Wraith Lord of the Wraith realm had requested an audience”

『 Ah, invite him in 』

“Yes”

A few moments later, the loud sound of laughter resounded.

“Ahahaha, Deity of [Chaos], you truly are our reliable allies, part of the contributions for this great victory certainly belong to you”

The Wraith Lord had come into their camp with a few dozen subordinates.

He tossed something over to her.

The God of Life received and examined it, only to see that it was a faintly glowing yellow crystal that was covered in natural Divine Script.

This was a Divine Crystal!

Even in the world of the past, this was a great treasure!

The God of Life was silently delighted and asked: 『 Thank you, Wraith Lord. For what did we owe the pleasure of your sudden presence? 』

“It’s like this, the Tomb of Myriad Beasts had taken advantage of when we attacked the Abyss to suddenly ambush us, I can’t help but return immediately to deal with them”

『 The Tomb of Myriad Beasts? 』 the God of Life pondered.

“It is part of the Samsara, a powerful one, not any lacking compared to us” The Wraith Lord replied.

The God of Life immediately understood and continued: 『 Ah... then you are suggesting...』

“This place had essentially been dealt with, the Abyss only has the last bit of forces left, so I want you to take control of the final clean-up campaigns while I return for the battle on the other side” the Wraith Lord replied.

The God of Life released her telepathy and scanned through the entire battlefield at once.

The corpses of Abyssal monsters laid all over.

The wraiths had won.

Even the carriers of [Chaos] on my part of the battlefield had begun to rest.

This is no issue at all.

The God of Life stroked the Divine Crystal in her hand, thought briefly, and replied: 『 Very well, leave this place to me 』

The Wraith Lord clasped his fist: “Thank you, after I kill of those invading beasts, I’ll surely send over other forms of thanks”

『 The Wraith Lord is too formal 』 the God of Life smiled and said.

“Then I hereby officially transfer my commanding authority to you” the Wraith Lord also smiled and replied.

『 Thank you 』

The Wraith Lord had his orders relayed.

The wraiths on the battlefield began to silently retreat.

While the God of Life commanded the carriers of [Chaos] to take over the entire battlefield.

The Wraith Lord exchanged pleasantries with the God of Life just a bit more before he led the wraiths and slowly retreated.

A group of subordinates followed the Wraith Lord into the space vortex, then released a skeletal airship and all boarded it.

The airship gradually sped up and flew away from the battlefield.

It was only after he had left the God of Life’s range of perception was the Wraith Lord unable to hold himself back any longer and abruptly spat up blood.

“Wraith Lord, sir!”

His subordinates rushed over.

The Wraith Lord wiped the blood from his mouth and asked in a low voice: “How much further until our warp point?”

A subordinate answered: “Sir, we’re still 13,000 miles away from it”

The Wraith Lord panted heavily: “Ignore everything else, we can speed up now—— fly at full speed, we need to leave this place as soon as possible, hurry!”

“Understood!”

The skeletal airship began to exude an emerald glow from the top of its mast while also giving off a loud vibration.

It had begun to fully accelerate.

Chapter 1183

The battlefield.

The God of Life had personally arrived at the center of the entire battlefield.

Her telepathy had been fully released to examine every last corpse.

The Abyssal monsters had all thoroughly died.

—killed by the wraiths using means that should reasonably exist in a war of this scale.

The wraiths had also paid the appropriate price for it, as there were large numbers of wraith corpses strewn all over, and even corpses from the [Chaos] side, all of which was clear evidence of war.

The God of Life slowly calmed down.

In truth, she had realized something amiss after the Wraith Lord left.

—the Wraith Lord had left too quickly.

Although he appeared completely calm, his speech was natural, sensible, and she didn't notice any discrepancy during the entire process; he had still arrived too quickly and left too quickly.

This could be understood as the strict discipline of their military, but if I think deeply about this, doesn't it feel a bit unusual?

The God of Life silently thought.

A carrier of [Chaos] flew in front of her, knelt down on one knee, and said: "Report! The entire battlefield had been completely examined, all Abyssal creatures had died in battle, there are no stragglers!"

The God of Life lightly sighed.

Perhaps I've been too paranoid?

While thinking that, she ordered: 『 Clean up the battlefield 』

"Yes!"

The carrier of [Chaos] delightedly relayed the order.

—cleaning up the battlefield was essentially just them collecting treasures.

Every last weapon, armour, treasure, and even certain unique Abyssal corpses were objects of value, which were all worthy of being compiled and pocketed.

The God of Life had only agreed to the Wraith Lord's request due to receiving his Divine Crystal, combined with how beneficial the tasks assigned to her was, plus the fact that the war had turned completely one-sided with no chance of failure.

She had always been a cautious individual.

Following her order, the God of Life quickly went to work.

During the next few dozen minutes, the clean-up work went very smoothly. Although the majority of the battlefield's items were completely useless to the God of Life so she simply bestowed them to the carriers of [Chaos], there were still one or two artifacts of great value that the God of Life couldn't help but take as her own.

This was nothing but beneficial.

Time slowly passed.

Everything was perfectly normal.

It was only after the clean-up of the battlefield was completed that the carriers of [Chaos] noticed a large hole at the edge of the battlefield.

This hole didn't appear to be anything extraordinary, even if someone jumped in to check, they'd find that it was completely empty, a barren place.

But there was a carrier of [Chaos] with excellent scouting abilities.

He noticed something wrong.

"True Deity, that place was hidden by a combination of the wraith's magic and talisman techniques, thus transformed into a different world separated from us. This was a typical World Technique, which is very hard to come by"

"Fortunately, this humble one had a unique clairvoyance technique that allowed me to discover the overlapping of these two worlds— otherwise, we wouldn't have discovered it at all"

The scout boasted his achievement.

The God of Life nodded and accepted the other party's exaggerated words.

— — — because even she couldn't discover that place, but a person with a unique ability managed to find it.

It could be seen that within the infinite worlds, simply being strong didn't necessarily mean that one was superior to everyone else in every way.

The God of Life questioned: 『 The wraiths tried to hide it from all of our sights, what do you think it would be? 』

The commanders who were powerful carriers of [Chaos] exchanged glances.

"True Deity, I think it might be some sort of treasure" one person commented.

『 Treasure? 』 the God of Life said.

"Indeed, a unique treasure that they couldn't take with them, having no choice but to leave hidden here through special means. After we had left, they would then send people here to release the World Technique and excavate whatever was inside"

The God of Life pondered: 『 Couldn't take with them...』

Another carrier of [Chaos] followed up: "Indeed, your excellency. On the battlefield, the wraiths were like a hungry pack of wolves that pounced at anything of value they could find, which left us with practically nothing"

"If their world wasn't under attack, they wouldn't have hurriedly run back"

The God of Life pondered for a while.

The Abyss had already lost.

This location was hidden by the wraiths, so if there truly were any dangers here, the Wraith Lord wouldn't have appeared completely calm as he did.

He would have been angered, focused more on their troops, and attacked with everything they had.

The God of Life quickly questioned: 『 While I wasn't here, did the Wraith Lord act at all? 』

“Not a single time” the carriers of [Chaos] replied in unison.

The Wraith Lord did not act... but a World Technique was performed to seal that place away, not allowing anyone to see it.

The Wraith Lord then ran back to save his Wraith realm...

The God of Life nodded: 『 Hm, that certainly makes sense. At least, the Wraith Lord didn't mention a word of this World Technique to me before he left 』

The carriers of [Chaos] all looked at her with enthusiastic gazes.

“True Deity, ma'am—” someone hesitantly said.

『 Nothing else deserves to be said, lead me to where it is 』 the God of Life curtly said.

Followed by a large number of carriers of [Chaos], she made her way to the edge of the battlefield and looked down the hole.

『 I just happens to know a method to break World Techniques, let me see exactly how strong the Wraith Lord's World Technique truly is 』

Saying so, the God of Life reached her black tentacles into the hole.

A large number of carriers of [Chaos] were all waiting with bated breaths.

As the black tentacles reached a few meters deep, the entire hole began to tremble.

A second later.

“Bam!”

Like an illusion, the hole completely disappeared from everyone's sight.

The twisted place was slowly returning to normal.

“Your True Deity excellency, your power is truly admirable!”

“Indeed, our Deity is so powerful!”

“Ahahaha, the wraiths' careful preparation was destroyed just like that”

The carriers of [Chaos] laughed with clear scorn of the wraiths.

But the God of Life was a bit stunned.

Clearly... I haven't even done anything yet...

Was the Wraith Lord's World Technique so weak?

What exactly is it hiding?

Please support our website and read on novelbold

The God of Life and everyone else turned to look at the recovering space.

It gradually returned to normal.

Instantly.

Countless screams and desperate cries resounded.

In the hole, numerous wraiths appeared, all of which were attacking a certain direction with everything they had.

The direction was the deepest part of the hole.

A single eyeball that was a few hundred meters in diameter was silently floating there.

None of their attacks managed to reach the eyeball at all.

At the same time, the wraiths who attacked the eyeball fell down like dominoes and died.

Countless corpses.

Wraith corpses.

The number of corpses had already piled up to become the size of a small mountain.

The war was desperate.

Or rather, this was a war that couldn't be won no matter what.

Wherever the eyeball's gaze passed through, the wraiths were immediately killed, their bodies collapsed to the ground and lost all signs of life.

The wraiths who were still alive were exerting all of their power to attack that eyeball.

However, the eyeball didn't notice these wraiths at all, it simply hovered and instinctively moved about,

There weren't too many wraiths remaining.

Finally, some of the wraiths noticed the situation outside.

"Look! The carriers of [Chaos]!"

"The master had safely left!"

"What?"

"They really are the carriers of [Chaos]!"

“It seems sir Wraith Lord is already safe!”

As if they had been pardoned, the remaining wraiths immediately turned around and ran.

The God of Life instantly understood the situation.

The Wraith Lord gave up so many wraiths just to stall time for himself, while he ran away as fast as he could.

Without hesitation, the God of Life immediately turned around to flee the battlefield.

Don't be ridiculous!

Not even the Wraith Lord and his countless wraiths managed to even stand up against that eyeball.

Even the Wraith Lord ran away!

The God of Life was deathly fearful.

She sped up as fast as she godly could, instantly traversing across the entire battlefield like a flash of light.

The void around her parted itself, displaying the images of countless worlds for her to choose.

The God of Life quickly chose a barren wasteland of a world and was about to crash into it.

At this exact moment.

Perhaps it was due to the God of Life's presence being powerful, or because of the countless world images, but the eyeball suddenly looked up and gazed towards the God of Life.

Following the eyeball's movement, the wraiths who were about to flee, as well as the carriers of [Chaos] who still haven't realized what happened, were all frozen in place.

All of them lost all signs of life, their bodies turned into drifting sand that collapsed and scattered.

All of them.

Were dead.

Only the God of Life remained, unable to move.

「 Who are you? 」

A voice resounded in the God of Life's mind.

The God of Life attempted to cast countless spells and magic but still could not move a single muscle.

She finally realized her situation.

『 I beg you, don't kill me, I can pledge my allegiance to you! 』 the God of Life turned around, faced the giant eyeball, and replied.

The eyeball gazed directly at her.

The voice continued to resound in the God of Life's mind:

「 Who— are you? 」

The God of Life noticed the other party's impatience and hurriedly answered: 『 I am the God of Life, a Deity from the Inner Plane, now a Deity of [Chaos] 』

「 The God of Life? The Inner Plane? Let me think a little bit... 」 the voice continued.

One breath.

Two breaths.

Three breaths.

The God of Life's body turned into drifting sand and was scattered into the wind as well.

A Deity who had survived for countless eons.

A Deity who was willing to consume her descendants just to continue living.

Suffered such a frivolous death.

A while later, the voice finally spoke up again:

「 Deity...? It could not even endure my thought, what a weak existence 」

...

At another location.

The sea.

Two Crossing Fish were moving forward through the waves.

“Look!” Ye Fei Li called out.

Gu Qing Shan and Zhang Ying Hao both focus their gaze.

At the very edge of the sea was a rocky cliff that connected heaven and earth.

Lines of grey text appeared in front of their vision:

[Due to your previous excellence, you have arrived 30 minute early]

[This is the Perished Secret Wall of Chaos. Behind this Secret Wall lies Chaos' secret for fighting against the Apocalypse]

[Chaos itself is a key, one that can help you unlock the secret in the darkness, but you must carry respect in your hearts, otherwise, not even your bones shall remain]

[Attention: The next Apocalypse will arrive in 17 minutes]

[You must quickly find the way to pass through the Secret Wall]

Chapter 1184

The three of them stared at the notification in front of them.

“Look at this, this notification indicates that [Chaos] is a key, then perhaps the Deity of [Chaos] is a God of keys?” Zhang Ying Hao said.

Seeing him joking around, Ye Fei Li followed up: “If they really are a God of keys, then maybe this notification is warning us to be careful? Try not to twist too hard when inserting it into the lock otherwise, you’ll break?”

Everyone went silent briefly.

That sounds like it would hurt.

Gu Qing Shan commented: “If the secret is considered as the lock, or the door, then to us, [Chaos] is a kind of guide— a guide for its True Deity to do something”

“Then, what exactly is that ‘something’?” Zhang Ying Hao pondered.

“I assume it’s to fight against the Apocalypse” Gu Qing Shan replied.

The other two turned to him.

“We saw it just now, [Chaos] is able to imprison the Apocalypse, so it was most likely the same as [Order]: created to fight against the Apocalypse” Gu Qing Shan explained.

“Then, why are [Order] and [Chaos] like fire and water? Wouldn’t it be better if they joined forces?” Zhang Ying Hao seemed confused.

“I have a feeling that this Apotheotic Combat will provide us with the answer” Gu Qing Shan replied.

While the three of them were talking, the two Crossing Fish boats reached the gigantic wall.

This was a wall that literally connected heaven and earth, whether it was up, down, left, or right, none of them were able to perceive the extent of its reach, a truly magnificent sight to behold.

The Crossing Fish boat slowed down while floating up and down 5 meters away from the wall.

They could now observe that on the surface of the wall, there were rivers, mountains, farmland, cities, as well as numerous living beings.

At this point, it was already nighttime so the cities and scattered houses were all being lit up with various light sources.

The world was silent.

——this wall was actually an entire world!

The three of them stood outside of this world as if observing an endlessly expansive map.

“How wondrous”

Ye Fei Li commented.

A few lines of grey text then appeared in front of the three of them:

[You've discovered the legendary world: Great Gate from the Immemorial]

[Entering this world, the following points must be paid attention to:]

[One: Those who enter this world will have their strength normalized to the standard of the living beings inside, no exceptions]

[Two: Every hour, you may only select one kind of supernatural ability that you can use, the others will be in a sealed state]

[Three: In 10 minutes, the Apocalypse will descend upon the Great Gate of Immemorial, you must seize your time and quickly find a way to survive]

[Final reminder: Entering the world of the Great Gate of Immemorial will always result in being dropped from the sky, take care to protect your head]

The three of them exchanged glances after reading through the entire content.

"This world has living beings... then they must have found a way to avoid those Apocalypses" Zhang Ying Hao commented.

"However, there's something more crucial, the people in this world are all around the same level of strength?" Ye Fei Li confusedly said.

Gu Qing Shan patted his shoulder and told him: "Right, but you don't need to worry about something like strength"

"Why not?" Ye Fei Li asked.

Gu Qing Shan replied: "Even if everyone possess the same strength, their personality, experience, bravery, and judgment will have differences, each of the factors I just mentioned can easily determine the flow of battle"

Zhang Ying Hao patted Ye Fei Li's other shoulder and added: "Other than supernatural powers, there are also combat skills that one needs to be learn and hone through actual combats on the verge of life and death"

Ye Fei Li looked at Zhang Ying Hao, then at Gu Qing Shan and shrugged: "With experts like you at my side, I feel very safe"

Gu Qing Shan and Zhang Ying Hao exchanged glances.

"Do it quickly"

"Right"

The two of them held Ye Fei Li's shoulder tightly and pushed him towards the wall.

"Wait—"

Before Ye Fei Li could finish his sentence, he had already fallen into that world towards a lake.

Zhang Ying Hao and Gu Qing Shan both jumped in as well.

Splash!

Splash!

Water splattered everywhere.

The three of them resurfaced, wiped their faces, then swam towards shore.

“My spirit energy has been suppressed to Foundation realm” Gu Qing Shan stated.

He then used his spirit energy in order to dry his body.

A red glow appeared on Ye Fei Li’s body, quickly extracting all of the water into a ball, and tossed it back into the lake.

“I’m around the same level” he spat up some water and said: “Next time you push me, say it first”

“No” Zhang Ying Hao refused, “When going for a swim, there’s nothing more fun than suddenly pushing someone in”

Zhang Ying Hao’s body shivered, then instantly changed his suit into a clean one.

The two others looked at him.

How interesting that not even Gu Qing Shan could see what he did.

Noticing their gazes, Zhang Ying Hao shrugged: “Whether it’s going to a bar or going for a kill, retaining one’s image is always crucial”

He put the rifle on his back away, replacing it with two revolvers in the holsters at his hip, then said: “We don’t have much time, let’s select the supernatural ability we can use during the first hour”

The three of them glanced at the void of space in front of them.

Please support our website and read on [novelbold](#)

All of their supernatural abilities have been listed on the UI, and only one of them could be chosen.

Ye Fei Li skimmed through and said: “Take a look, there’s no rule stating that we need to choose right away— in other words, we can wait for a while before we choose”

Gu Qing Shan immediately said: “If that’s the case, Fei Li and I won’t choose one right now, we’ll pick one when the situation calls for it”

“What about me?” Zhang Ying Hao asked.

Gu Qing Shan replied: “There are 7 minutes left until the Apocalypse arrives, we need a guide to help us find a place we can take refuge in”

“Got it”

Zhang Ying Hao chose his supernatural ability.

He knocked his hand on the ground and called out: “Precious, where are you? Meow—”

A large hole suddenly opened up on the ground where a cat jumped out from.

Meow meow meow?

The cat gently responded.

His eyes were now more spirited, his body had also grown considerably larger.

—after the previous evolution, his ability had become more potent.

Zhang Ying Hao hugged the small cat and lightly told it: “Aha, it’s like this, the Apocalypse is coming soon, so we need a place to take refuge”

The black cat reached his paw out and rubbed it against his mouth.

Zhang Ying Hao turned to Gu Qing Shan: “Can’t help it, we need to make some food for him first before he can guide us, this is the rule for activating this ability”

Gu Qing Shan turned to Ye Fei Li and asked: “Do you still have instant noodles?”

“Yes” Ye Fei Li replied.

Meow meow meow meow meow!

The black cat suddenly rejected.

Zhang Ying Hao wiped the sweat off his forehead and said: “He won’t eat instant noodles”

Gu Qing Shan and Ye Fei Li exchanged glances.

“Six minutes left” Ye Fei Li stated.

Gu Qing Shan told the black cat: “Then, what do you want to eat? We need to know before we can cook it for you”

The black cat replied:

Meow, meow meow meow

Zhang Ying Hao sighed and said: “He wants a strawberry shortcake”

Gu Qing Shan looked at the black cat and said: “Look, we’re in an emergency right now, can you eat some noodles first for now?”

The black cat appeared helpless and replied:

Meow meow meow, meow meow meow meow

Zhang Ying Hao said: “He said that he didn’t know about our situation beforehand and already picked the food he wanted to eat right as he appeared. According to the rules, this chosen food can’t be changed, and if he doesn’t eat this exact food, he can’t activate his ability”

The three of them and the black cat froze.

“Three minutes” Ye Fei Li reminded them.

Gu Qing Shan suddenly said: “Fei Li, make some noodles”

“Ah— uh?” Ye Fei Li couldn’t react.

Zhang Ying Hao emphasized: “He can’t eat instant noodles”

Gu Qing Shan sighed: “I’ll give it a try”

““You?”” the two of them asked at once.

“Hm, I’ve chosen the supernatural ability for this hour”

Saying so, Gu Qing Shan copied Zhang Ying Hao and knocked on the ground.

Another hole opened up on the ground.

Another black cat jumped out.

Zhang Ying Hao and Ye Fei Li both opened their eyes wide.

“This is—” Zhang Ying Hao muttered.

“Your ability, I’m borrowing it for now” Gu Qing Shan replied.

“But then this cat—”

“Ah, I had no other choice, so I found a substitute actor” Gu Qing Shan replied.

All three of them looked at the cat.

Exactly the same.

This black cat was pretty much exactly the same as the one in Zhang Ying Hao’s hand, down to the length of its whiskers.

However—

This black cat seemed to be a bit sad.

It dejectedly sat there, closed its eyes, and dispiritedly lowered its head to the ground.

Gu Qing Shan crouched down, consoling it: “It’s ok... you just turned into a cat, didn’t you? I also turned into one before”

The black cat sat motionlessly.

Gu Qing Shan continued: “Here, I’ll give you a bit of supplement, consider it mental comfort”

He put his hand on the black cat’s head and transferred 100,000 Soul Points over.

At this point, the black cat finally appeared a bit less dejected, reluctantly looked up, and called out:

Xiu xiu xiu—

Chapter 1185

“How did you do that?” Zhang Ying Hao asked.

Gu Qing Shan stroked the cat’s head: “This guy snuck in, or rather, was tacitly allowed in here by [Chaos]— while here, it can also choose one type of supernatural ability once per hour, and I’ve also chosen the same ability, which resulted in what we have right now when both is activated at the same time”

Ye Fei Li carried the bowl of noodles over.

The black cat took one strand, chewed on it, then spat it back out.

Xiu!

It patted its stomach to express that it was full.

Gu Qing Shan: “...”

Zhang Ying Hao: “...”

“No emotions whatsoever, that’s a bowl of noodles I carefully made” Ye Fei Li picked the bowl of noodles up and complained.

“Sorry about that, in truth, it only requires the origin power of the soul” Gu Qing Shan replied.

All of a sudden, the expressions of all three of them changed.

There were only two minutes left on the [Chaos] UI timer.

Gu Qing Shan said: “Adorable, the Apocalypse is about to arrive, quickly find the closest place we can take refuge in”

The black cat reached its paw forward and pointed at the lake:

Meow— pii! Wu wu!

Gu Qing Shan nodded in praise: “Well done, seems like you managed to substitute it just fine”

The three of them jumped into the lake and swam down.

They followed the black cat deep underwater, and swam a long distance before finally reaching a location next to a large rock at the bottom of the lake.

The black cat pointed at the rock.

Gu Qing Shan examined it carefully.

There was a door hidden under this underwater rock.

Gu Qing Shan pushed the door open.

A long flight of stairs made of rock appeared in front of them.

This flight of stairs led deep underground, with a wooden tab hung next to the entrance, which read:

[Attention: Please remember to close the door once you’re inside]

[Tonight 8 PM, an Apocalypse will arrive, the type is: Darkness Assimilation]

[If you hate the unending Apocalypse, please spend your spare time at the Nightshade Bar]

[Nightshade Bar, 30km this way]

At this point, the entire bottom of the lake was suddenly plunged into an even darker state.

The three of them looked up.

Only to see the moonlight and starlight over the lake had completely vanished.

The thick darkness was slowly but surely spreading throughout the entire world.

It was time.

The Apocalypse had arrived!

Without hesitating any longer, the three of them quickly went through the door and closed it tightly from the inside.

After travelling a few hundred meters downwards, they found an invisible barrier keeping the water out.

The three of them now stood on the rocky flight of stairs, completely wet.

Ye Fei Li looked at Gu Qing Shan and asked: "Where's your cat?"

"It was a substitute actor who only agreed to perform once, it has already returned" Gu Qing Shan replied.

The two of them began drying themselves off again.

"If I knew earlier, I wouldn't have changed" Zhang Ying Hao complained.

He shivered, once again changing into a black leather jacket, jeans, and a pair of sunglasses.

His black cat was sitting on his shoulder.

"A bar where people can take refuge from the Apocalypse huh?" Zhang Ying Hao loudly clapped his hands, apparently quite interested.

"Right, and it was also a location pointed out to us by your black cat, perhaps this place isn't only used to take refuge from the Apocalypse, but also find other information—— after all, this is [Chaos]'s turf, we've never even heard about it before" Gu Qing Shan replied

"A completely new world, perhaps there would be a lot of treasures and mystical forces hidden here" Zhang Ying Hao muttered.

"Then what else are we waiting for?" Ye Fei Li stated.

The three of them flew down along the rock flight of stairs.

A few moments later.

Two wolves stood in their way.

“The Nightshade Bar welcomes you, please pay the admission fee” one of the wolves told them.

“We have to pay here already?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

“Yes, from this point, you will have entered the range of the Nightshade Bar, which would reset your supernatural abilities” the other wolf replied.

“By ‘reset’, you mean——” Zhang Ying Hao asked.

One of the wolves replied: “You will be able to choose the supernatural ability you’d like to use once again”

“That’s quite decent, and reasonable, but what exactly do you take as fees?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

“Money, tools, treasures, weapons, information—— anything of value will do”

Gu Qing Shan nodded and reached towards his hip.

Nothing.

——right, to supplement the Crimson Demon Divine Spear’s power, he had literally given up his entire Inventory Bag, so Gu Qing Shan was now completely poor.

“No money?” one of the wolves narrows its eyes.

“There is” Ye Fei Li walked forward and casually tossed them a small bag.

A wolf received the bag, estimated it a bit before pouring out a few gemstones of wonderful color and texture.

Please support our website and read on [novelbold](#)

“Top-quality goods”

The wolf praised it before signaling the other one to move away.

Both of them bowed: “Welcome guests to our Nightshade Bar”

Ye Fei Li then took out a few golden coins of slightly darker color, shoved them into their hands, and whispered: “This is the first time we’re here; have you got any advice?”

After receiving the money, the two wolves became a lot more amicable.

“There are no rules in the bar, as long as you have money, you will be able to buy various things and enjoy respectable service as you wish” one of the wolves replied.

“The bar isn’t responsible for anyone’s safety”

“We will largely ignore competition and murder between guests, unless something occurs that is too big to ignore. In which case, the conflict must be resolved through gambling, those who refuse will be directly transported into the Apocalypse, where their pitiful outcome will be broadcasted live for the entire bar to watch!”

“This is the reason our bar had always been in business” the other wolf excitedly gritted his teeth and explained.

“Enjoy yourselves to your heart’s content!” the two wolves spoke in unison.

“Thanks” Ye Fei Li replied.

All three of them went forward following the stairs.

“Oi, Fei Li, how did you get those rare gemstones?” Zhang Ying Hao couldn’t help but ask.

Ye Fei Li explained while walking: “Last time, Laura summoned me in person, then explained how she had been observing me for a while. She said that I was a decent person, and is a good brother of Gu Qing Shan, so as the official Duke of the Bramble Bird Kingdom, I can’t sully the name of the kingdom and need to be careful of various points...”

“Get to the main point!” Zhang Ying Hao urged.

Ye Fei Li tried to keep himself as calm as possible and explained: “After that, she gave me a world— I think it was a bit larger than our homeworld, which was filled with treasures, all the way to the stratosphere— she said that world of treasures is my tentative allowance for the month and that I should ask her for more if it’s not enough”

Zhang Ying Hao: “...”

Gu Qing Shan: “...”

Zhang Ying Hao was stunned for a long while before he sighed: “I feel like I’ve lost my way on the long path of living up to this point, it was only just now that I finally found the correct path”

Gu Qing Shan was about to say something when he suddenly stopped.

The other two stopped as well.

Lines of grey text began appearing on their [Chaos] UIs.

[Attention, after crossing through the barrier 300 meters up ahead, you will have entered the Nightshade Bar]

[You have entered the range of the bar]

[From now on, you may reset your supernatural abilities]

[When necessary, please remember to change your supernatural abilities]

[Attention]

[You will still need to find the way to pass through the Secret Wall]

The three of them continued forward as the notification reminded them and soon saw a half-transparent barrier at the end of the stairs.

“We’re here” Ye Fei Li stated.

“Hm, let’s go in” Gu Qing Shan replied.

The three of them entered the barrier.

The world instantly became entirely different.

Loud noises filled this space.

Bright lights of numerous colors illuminated the bar within the loud screams and cheers of its patrons.

On the stage, a beautiful snake woman of the beast race and a Yuki-onna with snow-white complexion from the youkai race were madly dancing to the music, acting as the lead dancers for a trope of over 10 other beautiful women.

Alcohol, smoke, women, light, as well as—

「 Where did these shitty humans come from, weak sauce! Scram! 」

A towering two-headed demon was dead drunk as he swung a giant scythe towards Gu Qing Shan’s group of three.

Gu Qing Shan’s hands swiftly moved, but then stopped.

Next to him, Zhang Ying Hao had already pulled his revolver.

Bang!

With a loud noise, both of the demon’s heads exploded in blood and it collapsed.

“Double Quickdraw? Been a long time since I saw this gun technique” Gu Qing Shan praised.

“I learnt it when I was 7, nothing but foundational knowledge” Zhang Ying Hao replied.

The blood fluttered as mist in the air.

A group of men and women arrived closer to take in the fresh smell of blood.

Several bar attendants came and carried the demon’s body away without a single word.

One of them turned to Gu Qing Shan’s group and said: “Welcome our new guests, would you like a drink?”

“Strong liquor, preferably this bar’s specialty” Gu Qing Shan replied.

Ye Fei Li tossed him a gemstone, then sneaks him a gold coin as well and smiled: “Same thing”

“Ah, please wait a moment, I will bring it right away”

The bar attendant put the coin into his pocket and nodded.

He then made his way behind the counter to make the drinks.

While the three of them were waiting, another bar attendant stepped onto the stage and declared: “Tonight’s first dish, roasted two-headed demon! Any guests who would like to try it please proceed to Zone 1”

Quite a few stopped dancing and started to head towards a certain direction of the bar.

“I want his heart”

『 I've never tasted this kind of demon before...』

「 Trust this bar's skills, they can make any part taste like heaven 」

『 Really? I want to try that demon...』

They slowly went away.

Gu Qing Shan patted Zhang Ying Hao's shoulder and commented: “You killed that guy, but no one minded that at all— seems like this really is a place that'll ignore everything”

Zhang Ying Hao put his revolver back into his holster, then muttered: “Hm, I like this place”

Chapter 1186

Bam!

Ye Fei Li slammed the glass of liquor on the table, his expression was especially painful.

“What's the matter?” Zhang Ying Hao asked.

“The alcohol was too strong; you know how I can't really drink hard liquor” Ye Fei Li replied.

Gu Qing Shan clapped his hands to call the bartender behind the bar.

“A glass of sparkling wine, also, do you have strawberry shortcake here?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

“There's sparkling wine, strawberry— what's that?” the bartender asked.

Gu Qing Shan formed a hand seal to manifest an illusion, drawing the shape of a strawberry.

“Ah, you mean red fruit, please wait a moment”

The bartender took out a seed from behind the counter and chanted an incantation.

The seed in his hand quickly grew, formed into a tree, sprouted flowers then manifested several juicy strawberries.

The bartender picked the strawberry, handed it to a bar attendant, and told him: “Take this to the dessert master, our guests want a shortcake”

The bar attendant quickly left.

A few moments later, the cake was brought out.

“Thanks” Gu Qing Shan nodded to the bartender.

Ye Fei Li put a gold coin onto the bar counter.

“Always happy to serve” the bartender smiled and received the coin.

Zhang Ying Hao put the black cat down from his shoulder, telling it: "Precious, here's the strawberry shortcake you wanted, eat and find us the way out of this world"

Meow!

The black cat happily meowed.

He then proceeded to enjoy the cake bit by bit.

During that time, Ye Fei Li took a gulp of his sparkling wine and unfurrowed his eyebrows.

"I should have ordered this from the start. I don't know how you guys can drink alcohol that strong" he smacked his lips and commented.

"You drank too quickly, that's not really necessary. Drinking is meant to be a time for one to rest and relax, there's no need to pour everything down your throat" Gu Qing Shan slowly took a sip.

"Exactly, and this liquor is very good, you need to slowly savor it" Zhang Ying Hao also raised his cup and clinked his glass with Gu Qing Shan.

While the three of them were drinking, they also enjoyed the sight of the beautiful dancing girls.

In this entire bar, other than those who had drunk themselves to sleep, the living beings of every race had all taken human form.

Apparently, the human form being standard for communication was still a thing here, and not only in the 900 million World Layers.

However, quite a few of the ladies here had done everything they could to display the unique characteristics of their own race upon the basic human form in order to draw the eyes of more people.

The lead dancer snake woman appeared completely human, only by observing her flexible hips and belly as well as her vertical iris would one notice that she wasn't truly one.

As for the Yuki-onna, although she looked completely human, she had a snowy complexion, beautifully nurtured facial features, as well as a faint icy mist around her body. As she danced, the crystalized ice shards glittered in the darkness as they reflected the colorful lights.

「 Nice dancing! 」

Someone below stage cheered, then tossed a pale green fruit towards the snake woman.

Seeing the fruit, the snake woman skillfully caught it in her hand and batted her eyelids at the person.

The three people continued to drink while waiting for the black cat to finish his cake.

A nice fragrance drifted from afar.

A girl with a panicked expression approached them and hurriedly said: "I beg you, since we're all humans, please save me"

The three of them looked at her.

Only to see that she appeared around 16-17 years old, her skin complexion a perfect white, her facial features flawless except for the look of shock she was carrying.

She was human.

Meeting the girl's begging expression, Ye Fei Li turned to Gu Qing Shan.

Gu Qing Shan simply continued drinking.

Ye Fei Li had no choice but to shake Zhang Ying Hao.

Zhang Ying Hao shrugged and asked the young girl: "What happened? Why are you here?"

The young girl explained: "My world was destroyed, then I drifted into this place without knowing why, but couldn't find a way to leave"

"We don't know how to leave either" Zhang Ying Hao sighed.

"But you're still free, I was captured by—"

Before the girl finished her words, a few bulky men approached them.

"There!"

A bald-headed man with a thick beard declared.

The young girl was easily caught by him and dragged into the group.

While that happened, she turned to the three of them, constantly calling for help.

Gu Qing Shan didn't answer.

Zhang Ying Hao only gave them a curt glance before looking back down at his liquor.

Ye Fei Li couldn't contain himself any longer and approached the group.

"STOP!" he shouted.

The men immediately stopped and looked back at him.

"What do you want?" the bulky leader man questioned in a threatening voice.

"That girl isn't coming with you" Ye Fei Li declared.

The men exchanged glances, dropped the girl, and walked towards Ye Fei Li.

"Nosy brat, did you tell your parents before picking a fight with us?"

"Kill him!"

"Go!"

They abruptly attacked.

Please support our website and read on [novelbold](#)

Seeing that, the young girl ignored everything and ran.

She intended to take advantage of this and flee.

A crimson glow appeared on Ye Fei Li, preparing to defend himself.

But then.

A second later.

Chopped-up corpses laid all over the floor.

The men became corpses right before their eyes.

A cold gleam flashed through the air, slowly returning behind Gu Qing Shan, and faded into the void of space.

The bar was silent.

Everyone here was supposed to be at the same level of strength.

But no one saw how he did that.

No one knew how those people died.

Gu Qing Shan slowly took another sip as he put an intricate Bramble Bird earring on the bar.

“Huh? Isn’t this my storage tool?” Ye Fei Li was shocked.

Zhang Ying Hao patted the revolver at his hip and smirked: “That girlie stole your storage tool, I wanted to blow her head off in a single shot, but since Gu Qing Shan stole it back, I stopped”

Ye Fei Li turned to Gu Qing Shan.

“Ah, it’s nothing much, when it comes to pickpocketing, she’s still far away from even being a beginner” Gu Qing Shan raised his glass to him.

Ye Fei Li returned to his seat and took a gulp from his cup.

“Ying Hao, did you notice earlier as well?” he asked.

Zhang Ying Hao casually replied: “I manage an entire guild of hitmen you know. I’ve already seen every kind of people there are to see, and had naturally seen this type of activity over a thousand times”

Hearing that, Ye Fei Li felt a bit dejected.

“Don’t worry about it” Zhang Ying Hao consoled him, “Back then, I also thought I was already an expert, only to be deceived too many times to count when I first entered the 900 million World Layers”

“Really?” Ye Fei Li looked up.

“Of course, you think everyone can be like you? Immediately getting appointed as a Duke right when you walked out the door, that’s usually what people work their entire lives to get” Zhang Ying Hao replied.

A few bar attendants quickly arrived to clean up all the blood and body pieces.

They were apparently quite experienced, as it only took an instant for them to return the floor to how it was earlier.

Suddenly, that young girl from earlier returned.

Several men in black suits followed her with grim expressions on their faces.

“You dare to kill our people, prepare to—” one of the men in black started to speak.

All of their heads suddenly exploded.

Several ‘flowers’ of blood splattered in the air, drifting as a faint mist that filled the area.

One bullet, one life.

All of them were dead.

Zhang Ying Hao displayed a flourish with his revolvers before putting them back into their holsters.

“My apologies, when we’re all at the same level, no one can talk and still remain alive in front of me” he shrugged.

Gu Qing Shan then turned to the young girl and nodded: “You’re now free to go, no one else is restricting your freedom now”

The young girl froze.

She suddenly fell on her knees and started crying out loud.

Everyone was complacent.

Ye Fei Li looked at Gu Qing Shan, then at Zhang Ying Hao.

Both of them showed nothing on their faces.

Ye Fei Li still couldn’t help himself and lifted the girl up on her feet.

“Don’t be scared, it’s all over now” he gently said.

“Uuuu, hic”

The young girl laid her head onto his chest, almost as if she wanted to pour all of her hardship and torments up to this point out through her tears.

She suddenly looked up like she wanted to kiss Ye Fei Li.

Ye Fei Li hurriedly turned away, telling her: “No need—”

The girl kissed him on his neck.

Ye Fei Li immediately felt numb all over his body, unable to move.

The young girl abruptly turned him around and used him as a shield, then pressed a gleaming cold knife at his throat.

One last try, success!

From what I saw before, these three are the richest people in the entire bar!

She loudly laughed:

“Ahaha, you two over there, hand over everything of value on you, or I’m going to kill him!”

She turned to the bar.

Zhang Ying Hao just sat there with a shot of liquor in his hand, looking curtly at her with a faint regretful expression on his face.

The other——

Where’s the other one?

The girl suddenly felt disoriented.

Thud!

Her head rolled on the ground, spilling a bunch more fresh blood to dye the floor red.

Gu Qing Shan was standing behind her, sheathing his sword.

“A terrible pickpocket, and a very stiff actor”

He curtly commented.

Chapter 1187

The black cat soon finished his cake.

He jumped onto Zhang Ying Hao’s shoulder and pointed his paw in a certain direction.

Meow!

The black cat called out.

Zhang Ying Hao drank the last of his liquor and said: “Let’s go”

Gu Qing Shan and Ye Fei Li both stood up, following Zhang Ying Hao toward the backdoor of the bar.

“Gentlemen”

A bar attendant courteously walked in front of the door.

“The Apocalypse outside still hasn’t ended, may I ask what kind of services you require?”

Zhang Ying Hao looked towards his black cat.

The black cat pointed his paw at the door again and firmly replied:

Meow!

Zhang Ying Hao casually replied: "We want to leave from this door"

The bar attendant replied: "You gentlemen must not know, in order to leave through this door, you require permission from the Laws of [Chaos]"

"Really now?"

Ye Fei Li offered him a gold coin.

"Please tell us the specifics down to every last detail" he stated.

The bar attendant did not receive the coin from his hand and instead bowed respectfully: "If you can pay the appropriate price for this information, I will gladly tell you about this door"

"Of course, please tell us" Ye Fei Li replied.

The bar attendant walked in front of the door and grabbed the doorknob: "I'm an attendant of the bar, as well as an information broker. So when I put my hands on his door, the Laws would manifest a secret room in correspondence"

He pulled the door open.

As he said, the other side really was a secret room with a long table and two rows of seats.

"Please"

The three of them followed the bar attendant into the room.

The door closed behind them.

This place was incredibly silent, completely isolated from the noises of the bar.

"Then, as esteemed guests of our bar, the first piece of information is free"

The bar attendant explained: "Within this world where the Apocalypse is constantly taking turns wreaking havoc, the Laws of [Chaos] had set up several residential areas, each of them the only locations in this world that can guarantee the safety of living beings"

"For example, the Nightshade Bar"

At this point, the bar attendant went silent.

The three of them waited for a bit before they realized.

— — — that was already the first piece of information.

Ye Fei Li took out a bag of gemstones and put it all on the table.

"Please go on"

The bar attendant held the bag, estimated the content, then smiled:

“The requirements for entering each residential area is different, but as long as you can enter, you’ll be able to continue living inside for a long time”

“If one wishes to leave a certain residential area, they must go through the door of [Chaos] set up in that area in order to proceed to the next location”

The bar attendant went silent again.

The three of them had to wait for a bit longer before they understood.

However, this information was truly precious...

Ye Fei Li tossed out an entire trunk full of ancient gold coins and gemstones, spilling the content out on the floor.

Coins and gemstones filled the entire floor of the secret room, leaving no place to even stand up.

“Tell us everything you know all at once” Ye Fei Li demanded.

The bar attendant’s eyebrows couldn’t help but twitch in fear as he looked at the treasures all over the floor.

“When you want to leave your current residential area, simply place your hand on the door of [Chaos] and it will immediately know where you want to go”

He continued without stopping: “However, the gate of [Chaos] will declare a gamble to each person, and only by winning that gamble would you be transported to the location you wished”

“—A word of caution, there are actually many dangerous residential areas in this world, the Nightshade Bar is one of the more decent ones that can at least guarantee safety, there’s no need for you to leave”

Gu Qing Shan asked: “What do we need to bet for that gamble?”

The bar attendant smiled: “Of course, that would be your lives”

Gu Qing Shan then asked: “Have you ever gone to any other residential areas?”

The bar attendant shook his head: “Not at all, I signed a contract with the bar to serve them for a thousand years, in exchange for the bar’s protection— you need to understand, not everyone is as wealthy as you are”

Gu Qing Shan continued: “If wealth is the pass for the bar, what’s the pass for other residential areas?”

The bar attendant replied: “The other residential areas might not necessarily value wealth, they have tougher requirements of entry, and once you do not fulfill those requirements, there would be only one way to enter: that is to sign a contract as I have, to serve the residential area for the long years to come”

“If you can actually win the gamble, you need to prepare yourselves accordingly”

“Got it”

...

The three of them left the secret room.

The bar attendant no longer stopped them.

Gu Qing Shan put his hand on the door of [Chaos].

Instantly, a line of grey text appeared in front of their eyes:

[Due to your impressive wealth, you've managed to find the way to move through in the shortest possible time]

[Mortals who walk the path of Apotheosis, you will face a total of three gambles, which are, Extorting Information, Death Match, and Assassination respectively]

[Your betting chips are your own lives, if you win, you may pass; if you lose, you will immediately lose your lives]

[The gamble shall now begin!]

The grey lines of text slowly faded away.

A monster immediately appeared in front of them, which had a long tail, a pair of horns, and four hooves.

It had been tied up and pinned on the ground, but looked up and spat at them.

「 I won't tell you a single thing! 」 it shouted.

The three of them were silent.

Their gazes appeared a bit strange.

"This guy——" Ye Fei Li said.

Please support our website and read on novelbold

"Looks like..." Gu Qing Shan hesitated.

"A bull?" Zhang Ying Hao concluded.

New lines of grey text appeared in front of their eyes:

[First match: Extorting Information]

[This is a warrior from the Primitive Oxen race that isn't afraid of death]

[You must question and find out its goals and reasons for entering the Great Gate world from its own mouth]

[Time limit: 1 hour]

Gu Qing Shan excitedly said: "Primitive Oxen race... let me"

"No" Zhang Ying Hao stopped him, "We're definitely going to pass this trial with that ability of yours, I think we should try and retain the chance for you to choose your supernatural ability for now"

“What do you mean?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

“...I’ll give it a try first, if we can solve this without using supernatural abilities, then we’ll get to save that chance for later” Zhang Ying Hao replied.

“Sure” Gu Qing Shan stepped back.

Zhang Ying Hao stepped forward and rolled up his sleeves: “Extorting information, this one was actually also an old expertise of mine”

He ignored the Oxen monster’s reactions and began to caress the monster all over its body.

The atmosphere changed.

In the beginning, when the three of them tried to change the door of [Chaos], quite a few people were interested enough to gather around and watch.

But right now, Zhang Ying Hao was caressing this monster.

Everyone’s gazes turned a bit strange.

Zhang Ying Hao ignored everyone else’s gazes and slowly touched the monster’s body inch by inch with his hands.

“Oi, old Zhang, what exactly are you doing?” Ye Fei Li couldn’t help but ask.

Zhang Ying Hao was fully focused on caressing the monster and casually replied: “The Primitive Oxen race is quite a bit different from modern bulls, so I’m unfamiliar with them. I need to thoroughly examine him before I can tell the exact locations on his body, bones, and flesh that could induce pain”

He lightly pressed his hand against a gap between the monster’s ribs.

The monster began to howl like a slaughtered pig.

“Huh—— what are you screaming for? I still haven’t begun yet” Zhang Ying Hao scowled.

...

5 minutes later.

Zhang Ying Hao stood up.

He then pulled out a thin long box from his chest pocket.

Opening the chest, the content was revealed to be various needles, a pair of scissors, tweezers, daggers, spiral-tipped bolts, a pointy-tipped hammer, syringe, etc.

Zhang Ying Hao first pulled out a small gleaming knife and cut off a piece from the Oxen monster’s face.

He closed his eyes, carefully sniffed the piece of flesh a few times, and commented: “A bull’s face flesh is very rarely eaten, but it actually tastes quite decent...”

Gu Qing Shan received a set of kitchen utensils from Ye Fei Li and also rolled up his sleeves.

“This won’t need any supernatural abilities, I’ll help” he said.

Zhang Ying Hao nodded.

He then stabbed the small knife into the monster's left chest and cut out a round piece.

「 AAarrggh! I won't tell you a single thing! 」 the Oxen monster angrily roared.

Zhang Ying Hao completely ignored it and told Gu Qing Shan: "Here, this is quite a good piece of meat on his body. If you can, try to make it medium rare"

"Got it"

Gu Qing Shan began cooking.

A few moments later.

The meat was done.

Zhang Ying Hao received the meat on a plate and sat down in front of the monster.

He casually stabbed most of his tools into the places on the monster's body that hurt the most, waited for it to scream its heart out for a while, then pulled them back out.

After that, he used the same knife he cut the meat from the Oxen monster earlier to cut the cooked piece of meat.

"Well who would've thought? A guy like you actually managed to produce meat of this quality"

While saying that, he was eating the meat right in front of the monster.

The Oxen monster could only stare speechlessly at this scene.

It was soaked in a layer of cold sweat that was still pouring out.

——the physical pain was one thing.

But when someone sitting right in front of you ate the meat they cut from your body, while also chatting with you at the same time...

This had already far surpassed the Oxen monster's wildest imagination.

After Zhang Ying Hao finished that piece of meat, he took out another smaller knife and crouched down.

He began to make small incisions on the monster's head and stomach.

「 What are you trying to do? 」 the Oxen monster couldn't help but question.

"While you're still alive and fresh, I'm going to eat your brain" Zhang Ying Hao answered indifferently.

The monster shivered for an instant.

It looked at this man, then at the other.

The one who cooked it earlier was preparing a saw, a corkscrew, as well as various spices.

The Oxen monster immediately spilled everything like a rapid cannon: 「 Guys, I made a mistake, I came to the world of [Chaos] in order to search for traces of the world-destroying shadow from the Age of Immemorial. I want to obtain its power, I beg you please don't eat my brain; if you have to eat, please wait until after I die, I beg you 」

As soon as it declared this.

Instantly, it was gone from the bar.

Lines of text appeared in front of their visions:

[First gamble: Extorting Information (completed)]

[Congratulations, without using any supernatural powers, you've managed to win this gamble through your cruelty]

[Zhang Ying Hao, your cruelty had earned you the favor of Chaos]

[The cruelty towards an enemy is a kind of power in and of itself]

[If you cannot even show cruelty, then you are useless against the Apocalypse]

[The second gamble shall now begin]

[Death Match]

Gu Qing Shan collected the kitchen utensils and asked: "Have you ever tasted bull brain before?"

Zhang Ying Hao also collected all of his tools, clicked his tongue, then replied: "Bulls are so dumb, why would I eat their brains?"¹

Chapter 1188

Ding ding ding!

The sound of a bell rang out.

A boxing ring suddenly appeared in the middle of the bar.

Everyone gathered around it with ecstatic expressions.

In the middle of the ring stood a robust man with a long beard and blue skin, while a man who seemed like a coach stood behind him.

The expressions of everyone on Gu Qing Shan's side twitched at the same time.

Lines of grey text appeared in the void of space:

[Second gamble: Death Match]

[This is a contest of close combat where only the winner may survive]

[Opponent: The coach and disciple of Lotus city]

[Short synopsis: This pair of coach and disciple had killed over 30 billion living beings, fleeing for their entire lives before they eventually reached the Nightshade Bar]

[Attention: They are a pair of boxing coach and disciple who boasted supremacy since the Age of Immemorial, very rarely have they ever lost]

[You may only choose one person to fight, the other two will act as the coach and team owner, standing on the side of the ring as instructor and support]

[There is no duration for this death match]

[Survive, and you will win this gamble]

[If you die, you die]

The three of them quickly read through it all.

Ye Fei Li rolled up his sleeves: "I'll take this one"

"Are you confident?" Gu Qing Shan asked.

Ye Fei Li appeared emotionally: "Of course, while you weren't there, Barry had been training my boxing skills every day, big sis Kitty even volunteered to skip writing chapters a few days to help me train my footwork. This is the moment I display the fruits of my hard work"

Gu Qing Shan turned to Zhang Ying Hao.

Zhang Ying Hao shrugged and sent his voice: "It was the first time Barry had found someone he could beat up without running away, so he's been happily 'training' him every day, as for Kitty—— she's been doing nothing but shopping every day, her novel had already been rushed to completion, there's no serious issue like 'skip writing a chapter'"

Gu Qing Shan was speechless.

"Let me do it, I'm sure there won't be any issues" Ye Fei Li confidently declared.

"Alright, pay close attention and don't die" Gu Qing Shan replied.

Ye Fei Li stepped onto the boxing ring.

Gu Qing Shan and Zhang Ying Hao also walked up to the ring and sat down on their seats.

Zhang Ying Hao signaled to Gu Qing Shan with his gaze.

"Hey" he silently whispered.

"What?" Gu Qing Shan asked.

"Look at this notification—— [Chaos] is telling us to defeat this coach-disciple pair, but the only one on the ring is the disciple—— could the coach also take the ring after the disciple is defeated?" Zhang Ying Hao asked in confusion.

Gu Qing Shan thought for a bit, then said: "Let me play the coach, if there are any issues, I'll resolve it"

Zhang Ying Hao agreed: "Then I'll be the team owner"

Following the [Chaos] UI's suggestion, one of them became the 'coach', while the other became the 'team owner'.

On the boxing ring, Ye Fei Li and the blue-skinned robust long-bearded man both walked up to the center of the ring.

"Go back and suck on your mother's titties, ya stinkin' brat!" the long-bearded robust man shouted.

"..." Ye Fei Li.

He silently pulled a handkerchief from his pocket and wiped the spit off his face.

Ding ding ding!

The bell rang again.

One bar attendant acted as the match referee and shouted: "Death match, begin!"

A crimson glow appeared around Ye Fei Li's body.

He leapt forward right away.

And punch!

The long-bearded robust man's eyebrows twitched slightly.

—*this brat's movement is quick, his punch is also interesting.*

He howled, and swung his fist as well, completely ignoring to dodge or block.

Both sides forewent their defenses to land a punch on the other side's face.

Bam!

With a loud noise, Ye Fei Li was sent flying.

While several long slashes appeared on the left half of the long-bearded robust man's face.

—Ye Fei Li's punch wasn't a straightforward power punch like his, instead, it carried a sharp crimson aura that cut into the opponent 7-8 times with each punch.

"This is boxing, not a knife fight! You damn sissy!" the long-bearded robust man shouted.

Ye Fei Li cracked his joints a bit and scoffed: "Boxing that fits you best is the correct kind of boxing"

He swiftly moved forward like a gust of wind towards the long-bearded robust man.

This time, the long-bearded robust man was a lot more cautious, carefully avoiding the sharp crimson glow.

The two of them exchanged a few rounds of blows.

The long-bearded robust man was clearly more experienced as he was always able to find gaps in Ye Fei Li's movement and strike him.

Ye Fei Li was sent flying a few times.

"This is a Death Match, aren't you worried about him fighting like this?" Zhang Ying Hao sat there with one leg crossed and asked.

"It'll be fine" Gu Qing Shan crossed his arms and casually replied: "I remember when I first fought Ye Fei Li, he still managed to survive after I cut him in half"

Gu Qing Shan was completely calm as he continued to explain: "Furthermore, although Barry and Kitty seem like they're irresponsible, they actually worry about their own people a lot. The fact that they let Ye Fei Li go out by himself means that Ye Fei Li had at least passed their test when it comes to close combat skills"

Zhang Ying Hao pondered, then nodded.

Sure enough, no matter how badly Ye Fei Li was beaten, he would quickly recover.

While the long-bearded robust man was getting more and more badly hurt.

His coach suddenly shouted: "Go, you don't have to be afraid of him, your bones are tougher than his punches, you can take him!"

—-the long-bearded robust man appeared surprised.

"Got it, coach!"

He rushed forward and entered Ye Fei Li's range.

Please support our website and read on novelbold

"Come! Come! Come! This guy had already killed billions of living beings, a piece of garbage like you is nowhere even close to being a match for me!"

The long-bearded robust man loudly shouted and pushed Ye Fei Li back with a heavy punch.

"Peh!"

Ye Fei Li spat up some blood and narrowed his eyes.

The crimson glow flashed.

His punch also connected with his opponent!

"Aaaa, die!" the long-bearded robust man shouted.

The two of them continued to stay in close combat beating on one another, at some point, they both gave up on defending and focused all of their strength on punching the other party!

Blood and flesh splattered everywhere.

It wasn't until 7-8 breaths' worth of time later that they finally took distance again.

“Bahaha” while the long-bearded robust man was soaked in blood, he was laughing, “Since you’re about to die, I’m not afraid to tell you. I’ve already seen the state of your body through my power, my tenacity and constitution is thrice as much as yours!”

The coach below the ring followed up: “You’re definitely going to die! Human scum!”

Ye Fei Li didn’t say anything.

He simply popped open a can of drinks, then gulped it down.

The long-bearded robust man’s expression slowly changed.

——he could visibly see Ye Fei Li’s body returning to its peak.

Ye Fei Li casually tossed the can away, moved back and forth a bit, and grinned:

“Let’s continue!”

His stamina had fully recovered!

The death match continues!

Red and blue interweaving, two figures rushed into close combat once again, both sides kept on pounding the other without defending themselves, to the point that the sound of shockwaves resounded from their punches connecting with the other’s flesh.

In the end, it was the long-bearded robust man who couldn’t handle the heat and sent Ye Fei Li flying backward.

Ye Fei Li stood still, the crimson glow drifting over his body as he heavily panted.

All of his wounds slowly recovered themselves.

This wasn’t a supernatural ability, only his basic characteristic as a Man Killer Fiend – World Destroyer.

——similar to how spirit energy was part of Gu Qing Shan’s characteristic as a cultivator.

His fighting spirit was at its peak.

“Come on, his boxing is decent, but he has no experience in death matches, he’s no match for you!”

Below the ring, the long-bearded robust man’s coach slammed his chair and shouted.

Hearing that, the long-bearded robust man nodded: “Got it, coach!”

He rushed towards Ye Fei Li.

The two of them continued their stalemate!

“Something isn’t right” Gu Qing Shan slowly scowled.

“You’re right, something is amiss” Zhang Ying Hao also commented.

As time went by, the long-bearded robust man was getting increasingly more aggressive while his wounds were slowly closing up.

He had begun to overpower Ye Fei Li!

“This guy’s supernatural ability was to see an opponent’s parameters. He shouldn’t be able to suddenly turn the situation around like this” Zhang Ying Hao was silently concerned.

Gu Qing Shan didn’t say a word, his gaze paused at the long-bearded robust man for a bit before turning to his coach.

“Go on, you’ve got you where you want him!”

“There, another opening!”

“Straight! Hook!”

“Rush him! Rush him!”

The coach continued shouting from the backseat.

With his back-seating, the long-bearded robust man was able to exert his full power, becoming stronger as he fought.

After observing for a while, Gu Qing Shan understood.

Zhang Ying Hao also saw that clearly and muttered: “No wonder we had to be a ‘team owner’ and ‘coach’ for this fight. Seems like although we can’t tag him out of the ring or attack the other party, we can use supportive abilities to help Ye Fei Li”

The black cat suddenly disappeared from his shoulder.

For the first time since he entered the Nightshade Bar, he finally chose a new ability.

A Card appeared from the void of space in Zhang Ying Hao’s hand.

The Card depicted a group of lively monkeys gathered in the jungle, screaming at something.

Zhang Ying Hao tossed the Card out and shouted: “Reinforce!”

The Card vanished almost instantly.

Several projections of monkeys fell onto Ye Fei Li’s body.

A neon glow now appeared around Ye Fei Li.

His body became a bit faster, whenever the long-bearded robust man tried to attack, he would always be able to dodge.

The long-bearded robust man’s coach observed this for a bit, then suddenly shouted: “Don’t worry, this power isn’t always going to work, find the right opportunity and keep pounding him!”

“Got it, coach!” the long-bearded robust man answered.

He rushed forward and continued to clash with Ye Fei Li.

Both of them were trading deathly blows with bloodshot eyes as if they wanted nothing more than to kill their opponent with the next punch.

The coach then slammed his chair again, shouting: "Monkeys aren't brave, you gotta shout!"

The long-bearded robust man then began to shout as he punched, becoming increasingly faster.

Zhang Ying Hao's expression changed: "I think they have some sort of Mystical connection that allows them to grow stronger through these vague suggestions, no wonder why they're so tough to deal with"

Gu Qing Shan appeared a bit hesitant, unsure whether or not to speak.

All of a sudden, Ye Fei Li was struck by one of the punches and fell down, then spat up some blood before he staggered to stand up again.

Gu Qing Shan's expression changed.

"Fine, you forced me to use this one" he rubbed his temples and muttered.

Zhang Ying Hao suddenly turned around and asked: "You have a unique skill for this?"

"Yeah"

Gu Qing Shan cleared his throat, then suddenly stood up and shouted: "Yo~ ladies and gentlemen, you gotta listen to what I have to say!"

Chapter 1189

In the boxing ring.

Fresh blood and sweat dripped on the floor.

Both sides were relentlessly exchanging blows, throwing punch after punch, trying to score a hit on their opponent.

After a few moments of exchanges, Ye Fei Li was hit so many times that he couldn't help but retreat.

"Kill him!" the spectators all loudly cheered.

"Pursue, don't give him time to breathe!" the coach of the long-bearded robust man called out.

The long-bearded robust man immediately stepped forward and threw a punch with all his strength.

Ye Fei Li appeared a bit hesitant but still tilted his body to dodge.

After all, in both strength and experience, the long-bearded robust man was clearly one step superior, coupled with his coach's reinforcement, Ye Fei Li couldn't judge the power of this blow.

"Take advantage of the brat's loosened guard, he's still too inexperienced!" the coach loudly shouted.

The long-bearded robust man uttered a loud grunt and swiftly pursued!

"Speed! Your speed! Faster!" the coach hurriedly urged.

While the robust man was already going as fast as he could, he suddenly sped up a bit more.

Bam!

A heavy blow struck Ye Fei Li's face and coughed up a mist of blood.

Tilting his body, Ye Fei Li retreated a few steps to take distance again.

"A good chance!"

The coach appeared ecstatic as a faint glow appeared over his body—

He was about to fully exert his power!

"Catch the rhythm, use that killing fist technique to kill him! Don't let him run away!" the coach shouted one thing after another.

The long-bearded robust man's body started giving off the same glow.

He roared as his stature gradually grew larger.

His boxing gloves were now covered in a thick layer of steel that emanated an overwhelming pressure just by looking at it.

At this point—

Gu Qing Shan suddenly stood up from his seat and shouted towards the long-bearded robust man: "Yo~ ladies and gentlemen, you gotta listen to what I have to say!"

Azure Dragon Shadow Hex – Binding!

"This boxer and his coach are fucking complete garbage, what straight, hook, or uppercut? Anyone who dares to touch my good brother is going to have to prepare a countdown towards their death!"

"Boxing is boxing, the hell are you guys cheating for? Even a boxer wanted throughout the entire Reality has to resort to such things, I'm going to cut all of them down with this sword in my hand, mark my word!"

"I say you're going to die, then you're definitely going to die, even if [Chaos], the Apocalypse, or Samsara comes here, even though this path is full of danger and crisis, with our sword, our gun, our fists, we're going to level it all!"

Gu Qing Shan paused, then suddenly raised his voice:

"Ye~ Fei~ Li~ stand up and fight this to the end! This pair of young and old geezers are trying to cheat, but they don't know I have this hex, stop their bodies, drop their speed, make his punches always miss. Triple hook, seven barrages, just hit him like a storm, hit him till he drops, then clench your teeth and give him a final hit!"

"Got it!"

A pair of bloody red wings spread widely behind Ye Fei Li; the crimson glow focused all onto his arms to form several projections of sharp spikes.

"AAAAA, DIE, BRAT!" the long-bearded robust man shouted.

Ye Fei Li lowered his body, then abruptly threw both hands to the ground.

Boom!

The entire bar trembled from this impact.

The long-bearded robust man lost his footing slightly.

It was at this moment!

Ye Fei Li turned into a blurred image that circled around the long-bearded robust man several times in a split second.

His punches were lightning fast!

The crimson images struck the long-bearded robust man's body, again and again, not allowing him any time to block.

—-although the long-bearded robust man's power had reached his peak, his speed was slowed down too much by the Azure Dragon Hex.

His body couldn't keep up!

Bam bam bam bam bam bam!

The sound of a barrage of punches resounded.

"Yaaa—"

Ye Fei Li focused all the crimson glow around his body to his fist and struck the robust man right at his chest.

Please support our website and read on novelbold

The robust man collapsed, completely unable to move or to even try and stand back up.

"No..." the long-bearded robust man laid completely flat, spitting up blood as he obstinately trembled, "I can destroy an entire world with a single strike, I've killed numerous living beings, how could... I die... like this..."

His head went limp, he had stopped breathing.

Instantly, the boxing ring, his body, the coach, everything disappeared.

Lines of grey text appeared in front of their eyes.

[Second gamble: Death Match (completed)]

[Congratulations, your coordination, and cooperation had led to this death match ending with your victory]

[While the other part wasn't competing fairly, you sharply managed to notice this, then quickly coordinated with one another and used an even more brazen method to triumph]

[If one day you face the challenge of the Apocalypse, hopefully, you will recall your enthusiastic display earlier]

[Against the Apocalypse, one must utilize every mean at one's disposal in order to triumph]

[The third gamble shall now begin]

[Assassination]

A flash of light descended and swept the three of them away from the bar.

...

Smoke and fire filled the air.

In the middle of a city of steel and concrete, the occasional sound of an explosion could be heard.

Fighter planes could be seen flying through the skyscrapers above.

Tanks, military, and soldiers had gathered as defensive fronts to discharge their ammo towards some sort of enemy.

The sounds of screams, cries, howling, and explosions were heard.

The entire world was in shambles.

Gu Qing Shan, Zhang Ying Hao, and Ye Fei Li all walked out from a large supermarket.

Ye Fei Li grabbed the nearest bottle of iced water and gulped it all down.

"What's the situation?" he panted and asked.

"Not sure, this seems like a very primitive technological world" Zhang Ying Hao commented.

"Apparently, they're fighting against a kind of Apocalypse— right, congratulations, Fei Li, that guy earlier was quite strong" Gu Qing Shan said.

Ye Fei Li was a Man Killer Fiend.

An entity that could grow stronger simply by killing.

That boxer just now was exceptionally strong, but due to him staying in the Great Gate world, his strength was normalized, and he had no choice but to fight Ye Fei Li on equal footing.

That was why he couldn't accept his death.

"Thanks, regretfully, my strength is still being suppressed, so I can't evolve right away" Ye Fei Li replied.

"No need to hurry, we still have one last trial to go through" Gu Qing Shan said.

The three of them all turned to the void of space.

Lines of grey text appeared on UIs in front of them.

[Third gamble: Assassination]

[This is a battle between Order and Chaos]

[Opponent: All carriers of Order]

[Short synopsis: During this Apocalypse, a kind of Order had silently descended on this world in an attempt to aid them against the Apocalypse. In the middle of this era of struggle between Order and Apocalypse, an innate Deity of Chaos had been born]

[Order had discovered the appearance of this Deity of Chaos; it had rallied the entire force under it to assassinate them]

[Attention: This Deity of Chaos hasn't fully awakened; she is incredibly immature and would be helpless to go against this world-wide hit]

[She can be killed by a carrier of Order at any moment]

[Furthermore, the Apocalypse had also realized the existence of this Deity of Chaos, it is also in a hurry to eliminate this Deity of Chaos]

[Under these serious circumstances, you have two paths to choose from:]

[One, you must protect her until she awakens;]

[Two, you must come up with a way to take her and flee from this world, away from all forms of danger, after which you will have passed the trial]

[No time limit]

[Special warning: This is not a game, nor is it a drill, everything in this world is real and occurring at this exact moment]

[You must save her no matter what!]

[If that Deity of Chaos loses her life here, you will also die!]

Chapter 1190

A large supermarket.

In complete shambles.

Other than Gu Qing Shan's trio, there were only 7-8 corpses lying on the floor.

After taking a short look, the three of them stopped caring and turned their gaze towards the notification hovering in front of them.

[To ensure nothing goes awry, Chaos had spent a great deal of power to arrange your identities within this world's timeline and fate]

[You are Professionals of this city who had only just awakened not too long ago]

[Normal people might not recognize you, but your data is being kept by the higher brass of humanity, they will not suspect you]

[Treasure your identities, work carefully]

The three of them exchanged glances after reading through everything.

“If [Chaos] spent this much energy and effort, this mission seems to be quite difficult” Zhang Ying Hao commented.

Ding!

Lines of grey text appeared again, displaying the following messages:

[The Era had Chaos hadn't fully descended, but an innate Deity of Chaos had already been born, this is an unexpected turn of events]

[Due to how crucial this event is, the Era of Chaos cannot mobilize too much manpower or cause too much commotion, thus it can only be done covertly by your group of three]

[To avoid the unnecessary attention from other entities, your power level will be kept suppressed in your current states]

[Chaos is currently providing you power, please wait for 3 seconds]

[3]

[2]

[1]

[All of your supernatural abilities had been unsealed and can be used as you pleased]

[From this point, all of your personal artifacts had been bestowed ample power and can be used again]

Oong—

A sword appeared from the void of space, circling around Gu Qing Shan.

“Ah? Why did I suddenly wake up?” Luo Bing Li's voice could be heard.

The Six Paths Great Mountain sword appeared from the void of space as well.

Shannu said with a jumpy tone: “How perfect, with you here, gongzi would feel a lot less pressure”

“What happened?” Luo Bing Li asked.

The two swords discussed among one another, then quickly vanished back into the void of space.

Zhang Ying Hao asked doubtfully: “Why are all of your sword spirits feminine?”

Oong! Oong!

The Earth sword and Chao Yin sword both appeared, circling once around Zhang Ying Hao's neck in a threatening manner.

“Ah, I was wrong, so there were also two pure men among men! Heroes!” Zhang Ying Hao hurriedly corrected himself.

The two swords slowly returned and faded into the void of space.

Gu Qing Shan just chuckled and shook his head without saying anything.

Ye Fei Li commented: “[Chaos] put in such a huge deposit, seems like we really will have to go at this with everything we have”

“Right, even if only to survive, we would have to either way” Gu Qing Shan replied.

Zhang Ying Hao returned to his solemn appearance and started drawing Cards from the void of space, soon holding an entire hand full of Cards.

Ye Fei Li perked up his ears.

“The souls are all crying, the enemy seems to be very strong, we’re knee-deep in it this time” he said

“What are the enemies?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

Ye Fei Li listed for a bit longer, then explained: “Apparently it’s some kind of world-destroying calamity, it can bestow intelligence and power to other living beings, the people of this world call it— the Five Elements calamity”

“Five Elements calamity” Gu Qing Shan muttered.

Before he had time to think further, a line of grey text appeared in front of his eyes:

[Attention, challenger of Apotheotic Combat, Gu Qing Shan. You have saved many worlds and countless living beings, but this mission is one of secret, which will directly affect your survival, so your number one priority must be to find the unawakened Deity of Chaos, not to save this world]

Gu Qing Shan helplessly sighed.

He grabbed a bar of chocolate from the shelf, peeled it open, and said: “Ying Hao, let’s find our target”

Zhang Ying Hao placed the stack of Cards from his hand into his pocket and knocked on the ground.

The black cat jumped out again.

“Precious, this time we need to find someone” Zhang Ying Hao gently said.

The black cat twitched his body a bit, then hesitantly:

Meow meow meow meow meow— meow! Meow meow! Meow meow meow!

(I want to eat instan— no! Wait! This is a supermarket!)

He ran by himself towards a shelf, ripped open a bag of dried anchovies, and happily chowed down.

The three of them exchanged glances.

This time, there shouldn’t be any issues.

Zhang Ying Hao sighed and said: “Seems like we’ll just have to wait here for a while”

Ye Fei Li also picked up a bar of chocolate, took a bite, and commented: “From how these shelves look, their supply of food seems to be quite abundant”

“Right, they still have chocolate” Zhang Ying Hao lit a cigarette and commented.

“This is probably thanks to [Order], otherwise both food and resources should have been scarce during an Apocalypse” Gu Qing Shan replied.

While the three of them were talking, several men in military uniform rushed into the supermarket, panicking as they searched for a place to hide.

They didn’t think that there would be someone in the supermarket, so they raised their guns in surprise.

“Get out, scram!” one of the soldiers shouted.

The three of them continued doing what they were doing.

The black cat was burying himself in dried fish, gnawing on an especially big one.

No one reacted to him.

Tak tak tak!

The soldier let loose an entire cartridge without hesitation.

A bright red glow manifested into a wall to shield the three of them.

The bullets directly bounced off the wall.

Ye Fei Li only glanced at him a bit before looking away.

—these people were too weak.

“Professionists, run!”

The soldiers exclaimed in shock and hurriedly fled the supermarket.

Gu Qing Shan commented: “Fei Li’s current mental fortitude is quite decent; you could’ve killed and absorbed them to increase your strength, but didn’t”

Ye Fei Li grinned, then replied: “I normally don’t kill people”

Gu Qing Shan froze, feeling these words to be a bit familiar.

Dong! Dong! Dong!

The floor began to rumble intensely as if something was attracted to those people and was chasing them.

—no wonder those people tried to force Gu Qing Shan out of the building earlier.

Following that, desperate screams could be heard from outside.

The vicinity of the supermarket became silent again.

Dong! Dong! Dong! Dong!

The rumbling slowly left.

Please support our website and read on [novelbold](#)

A few moments later.

A man in an officer-looking military uniform flew in.

“Which brigade do you belong to?” the man observed them.

The three of them also observed him.

This military man carried some unique fluctuation of power, quite obviously superhuman.

A few lines of text appeared on their [Chaos] UIs:

[Be careful, this is a carrier of Order]

[Your Chaos UIs will soon be concealed, only reactivating after this rescue mission]

[Attention: Chaos is not afraid of Order; this matter simply requires a great deal of caution]

[Special note: This is the last of the three gambles, after winning this gamble, you may bring the Deity of Chaos back to the Great Gate world, where she will join your group and help you fight against your competition!]

After these lines of text finished displaying, the UI curtly vanished without a trace.

“I feel like... [Chaos] is acting a bit too careful” Ye Fei Li sent his voice.

“That goes to show how important the unawakened Deity is to it” Gu Qing Shan evaluated and commented.

“Hello, we’re civilians” Zhang Ying Hao waved to greet the military man.

The man narrowed his eyes, then took out a device to scan the three of them.

After reading what was on the device, he appeared surprised: “So you were Professionals of this city— who had only just awakened— very well, I now declare that you have been conscripted, immediately follow me to stop the Five Element calamity”

“Alright” Gu Qing Shan replied.

The man appeared a bit shocked.

I didn’t think they’d be so willing.

Although, this is their city, their home, so I guess their reaction is relatively normal.

“Let’s take a look at the situation of this world” Gu Qing Shan sent his voice to the others.

They all had a tacit understanding.

Zhang Ying Hao picked up a piece of dried fish and carried the black cat on his shoulder.

The three of them followed the military man.

Only to find a fighter plane chasing after a few sprites of light in the sky, occasionally attacking one another engaged in an intense air combat.

The human army on the ground was already defeated.

Soldiers were desperately fleeing.

Various heavy weaponry and tanks laid strewn all over.

The military man didn't care about any of that and simply led them towards where the battle was the most intense.

"Obsolete technology, they haven't even implemented fighter Mechs yet, otherwise we would have been able to show them a thing or two"

Zhang Ying Hao sent his voice to Gu Qing Shan.

Gu Qing Shan nodded, then saw the corpse of a man on the ground, which had a bow and a quiver lying next to it.

This was a technological world, yet someone was using a weapon like this, which meant that the weapon was probably quite decent.

Gu Qing Shan waved his hand to summon the bow and quiver.

In Heaven Pillar world, the fragments of the world had also transferred some advanced archery techniques to him.

— but he never had a chance to use them yet.

"Do you know how to use a bow?" the military man questioned.

"I dabble" Gu Qing Shan replied.

"This is advanced equipment for army commanders, after this campaign is over, you will have to hand them in" the military man sternly told him.

"Alright" Gu Qing Shan answered.

The four people suddenly looked forward.

All the noise in their vicinity ceased.

— as if all the men who had been fleeing before had died.

Dong! Dong! Dong!

The sound of heavy footsteps.

Followed by a lion that was as tall as three people who emerged from the corner of the street.

Wherever it walked passed, the cement and concrete ground turned into loess.

The three of them exchanged surprised glances.

This lion was capable of changing the basic chemical composition of the world, this wasn't something that could be achieved through simple elemental manipulation.

“Be careful, that is a Golden Sand Lion King, an Elemental Earth monster, extremely powerful” the military man told them.

Mana exuded from his body, manifesting as a green Elemental Wind aura.

“Support me!” he shouted.

“At once!” Gu Qing Shan shouted at the other two.

The lion abruptly opened its mouth and uttered a thunderous roar:

「 Humans, you will die right here! 」

Bang!

The sound of a gunshot.

At the same time, a bright red flash appeared, then vanished.

Zhang Ying Hao displayed a gun flourish before holstering his guns; Ye Fei Li simply stood still, continuing to eat his chocolate.

With a heavy ‘thud’, the lion collapsed.

The military man was shocked, looked at the two of them, then back at the lion.

The lion laid completely still on the ground.

The military man then carefully walked forward to examine its body.

Only to find that both of the lion’s eyes had been blinded by bullets, its entire body was completely intact except for a razor-thin slash wound that went through its entire neck, leaving only a single bit of skin that made sure the head didn’t fall off.

And there was an arrow tip poking out through the lion’s nape.

The military man recalled something, then turned back to Gu Qing Shan with disbelief.

“You...”

He knew for a fact that the other two had attacked, but what happened to this arrow!?

Gu Qing Shan lowered his bow and replied: “It opened its mouth too widely when talking”

The military man stayed silent for a while, then pointed at the bow in his hand: “That bow is yours to keep”

Desperate screams resounded ahead of them again.

“Let’s go”

The four people went along the yellow dirt road, rushing forward.

Two blocks later, they witnessed something else.

A snake that was several meters long had coiled itself around a skyscraper, looking down on the humans below.

It breathed out huge gusts of cold air that caused many people to become frozen in place, helpless to do anything and slowly losing their lives.

“I’m only at Foundation realm right now, I can’t fly” Gu Qing Shan said.

“Then let me”

Zhang Ying Hao took out his assault rifle and said.

When he was about to snipe the monster, the sound of a cat resounded from his shoulder.

Meow!

Everyone looked at the black cat.

Only to see that he had eaten so much that his stomach was bulging, currently rubbing his belly in satisfaction as he pointed in another direction.

Chapter 1191

The three of them turned towards the direction that the black cat was pointing.

Only to see the black cat pointing at another street where many soldiers were trying to keep order while helping the citizens evacuate.

Long lines of people crowded the entire road, everyone trying their best to suppress their voices as they quickly retreated.

But there were simply too many people, and even ‘quickly’ wasn’t that quick.

Other than that street, the carriers of [Order] and other Professionalists were doing everything they could to stop the monsters and buy time for the military to retreat.

“Over there? Or following that direction?” Zhang Ying Hao asked.

The black cat nodded.

Meow!

Ye Fei Li swiftly took flight.

“Stand down!”

Several voices scolded him at once.

These voices came from the soldiers who were maintaining order while evacuating people.

Ye Fei Li was a bit surprised and asked: “Why?”

Very quickly, a woman in commander-rank military uniform stepped out and observed him: “All Professionalists are currently in battle, there are only civilians here. What, are you trying to blend into the crowd and flee with the civilians?”

Ye Fei Li retreated, a bit embarrassed.

The military man watched their expressions and said: “You want to go that way? That road leads to our military company’s temporary base, we need to first kill these monsters, otherwise no one will be able to leave this city” (TN: Company here actually refers to a military unit of troops, similar to legion or squad, not a financial company)

Gu Qing Shan looked forward.

The giant snake slithered along with the skyscraper, continuously breathing cold air towards the Professionalists who were attacking it.

Its pair of vertical irises occasionally suck a glance towards the street of evacuating people, displaying cruel killing intent.

If there wasn’t anyone restraining it, it would most likely rush towards that street and kill everyone in its sight.

“You’re right, looks like we need to kill this snake” Gu Qing Shan replied.

Zhang Ying Hao breathed out a puff of smoke, raised his assault rifle and loaded it with a cartridge of special bullets, then took aim.

An autumn-clear blue steel sword appeared next to Gu Qing Shan and whispered: “Gongzi, your current spirit energy reserve is only at the level of Foundation realm. You won’t be able to wield us to fly, only wield us in your hands, please be careful”

Gu Qing Shan replied: “It’ll be fine. They’re the attackers, I’ll just defend. Not to mention I still have this bow and arrows”

“And me as well” Ye Fei Li added.

He appeared nostalgic, then said: “Since everyone’s strength are at the same level, my destructive regenerative powers can actually be used to great effect”

He took out the Clown mask, turned into a streak of bright red blood, and took flight.

“First blood——” Zhang Ying Hao declared.

Bang!

An abrupt heavy gunshot resounded.

The powerful recoil caused Zhang Ying Hao to take two steps back as dust and ash were kicked up by the shockwaves.

The giant snake howled in pain.

A large hole was punched through its head, where blood continuously flowed.

The snake went completely berserk and spat cold air in every direction, scaring the Professionalists from approaching it.

Gu Qing Shan looked at the snake, then at Zhang Ying Hao, and asked: “That’s an assault rifle?”

Zhang Ying Hao was rubbing his aching shoulder and replied: “My strength had been suppressed, can’t exert this weapon’s true power”

At this point, Ye Fei Li’s mad laughter resounded from above.

[Ahaha, for a guy with a hole through their head, you sure can rampage!]

The Clown.

The Murder Clown.

He had been waiting for this chance, flying in the air.

The Clown suddenly sped up and shot into the snake’s body through the hole in its head as a red streak of light.

The giant snake froze for a brief moment, its entire body abruptly tightened.

—anyone could observe the degree of pain it was in.

The skyscraper was completely crushed by its coil and fell to the ground together with its corpse.

Boom!

The snake’s head exploded and gave off a huge cloud of blood mist.

The clown emerged from the mist of blood, gracefully bowed to Zhang Ying Hao, and said: [I’ll take the First Blood, though you did receive a wonderful Assist]

Zhang Ying Hao helplessly shrugged.

The military man who was with them earlier watched the snake’s body in shock, then couldn’t help but clear his throat: “You three... experts, let me reintroduce myself, I am Major Li Da Jun”

“Since you have displayed such strength, I won’t deceive you any longer. Countless Apocalyptic monsters had gathered in an encirclement around the city, preparing to eliminate everyone here”

Gu Qing Shan questioned: “Then the evacuating people are—”

“They can indeed retreat to our military company’s temporary base, but the base itself is also inside the monster’s encirclement” Li Da Jun replied.

Please support our website and read on novelbold

Roar—

「 RAAAAH, WHO KILLED THE SNAKE KING!? 」

From not too far away, a thunderous roar could be heard.

Li Da Jun’s expression changed: “Oh no, we need to seize the time to retreat. The Great Earth Giant Demonic Double Ape has found out about this place, it’s quickly approaching us!”

Following his declaration, the Professionalists also started to flee.

“Great Earth Giant Demonic Double Ape?” Gu Qing Shan doubtfully asked.

“Yes, they are strength-type Elemental calamities, their bodies can endure any type of bullet or magic, which makes them incredibly hard to kill!” Li Da Jun replied.

A towering dark figure descended from the sky.

Boom!!!

The earth trembled.

A 20-meter-tall giant demon ape landed in front of the skyscraper’s wreck, staring at the giant snake’s body.

「 Who killed it!? 」 the demon ape howled.

Bang——

Another heavy resounding sound of gunshot.

The demon ape retreated one step back, then abruptly looked at Zhang Ying Hao.

There was now a hole around the size of a fist on its shoulder.

The demon ape smirked to reveal its set of razor-sharp teeth and grunted: 「 Only—— that much—— 」

It suddenly looked down.

Only to see a guy in a clown mask using a piece of rock soaked in snake blood to draw circles on its chest.

[Shishishi, there’s four beating hearts right here. Zhang Ying Hao my friend, you’re going to have to hit four shots in a row!]

The clown seemed to be humming a folk song as he excitedly declared.

Zhang Ying Hao raised his long sniper rifle again.

The demon ape’s expression warped.

It swatted the clown away and shouted: 「 I’ll support you, kill, then we’re leaving! 」

A sudden change.

Another demon ape appeared behind this demon ape.

Shu——

Rocks and dirt were kicked up.

The second demon ape immediately rushed towards the retreating road of people.

Its footsteps were rapid, rushing at an unimaginable speed towards the crowd of people.

「 DIE! 」 this demon ape howled.

It raised both its gigantic fists and struck down at full force.

The people were completely helpless to escape, having no choice but to scream in desperation.

Seeing this, Li Da Jun's expression turned ashen as he collapsed to his knee: "It's over..."

Instantly, the gigantic fists came down!

The world was silent.

One breath.

Two breaths.

Three breaths.

Everyone was shocked to find that they weren't dead.

Li Da Jun also abruptly looked up towards the people in disbelief.

At some unknown point, Gu Qing Shan was already standing among the crowd.

The bow now strapped to his back, his hand wielding a sword with an ancient design that held back the demon ape's fists with one hand.

The demon ape exerted all of its power trying to lower its fist.

Gu Qing Shan remained unmoving.

The sword also stopped the fist completely without moving an inch.

[Sanctuary] had exerted power equivalent to 1001 times the giant ape's own weight, completely stopping it from advancing it any further.

Behind Gu Qing Shan, a black cat had just walked over and jumped onto the shoulder of the female military woman from before.

"...So they've already found their target" Gu Qing Shan muttered.

The Earth sword was turned and thrust forward.

Shu.

Blinding sword phantoms manifested as a rampaging tsunami that completely enveloped the giant beast.

Chapter 1192

The demon ape was sent flying by a single sword strike.

It wasn't until it had flown a few hundred meters that its body was split in half as it fell to the ground.

Not a single drop of blood was shed.

The two halves of its body turned into mud, then quickly fused back together.

「 Useless, you can't kill me this way! 」

The demon ape stood up and shouted in anger.

The other demon ape had also been shot twice, so it stopped trying to fight with Zhang Ying Hao and Ye Fei Li, instead, it jumped towards this demon ape.

The two demon apes slowly fused into a four-armed twin-headed ape.

A more powerful and cruel presence could be felt from this monster.

Dong! Dong! Dong!

It slowly approached the group.

「 You managed to force me into this form, it seems like this will be a battle worthy of my full strength 」 the four-armed twin-headed ape solemnly declared.

Gu Qing Shan wielded his sword.

Zhang Ying Hao quickly reloaded his gun.

Almost a dozen bright red sharp spikes grew from the Clown's back.

When the battle seemed inevitable, a loud series of noises resounded from the far edge of the city.

Coo coo coo— chirp!

Coo coo coo— chirp!

The four-armed twin-headed ape froze up.

Several black minuscule figures flew into the city at an unusually rapid speed, chirping all over the burning venues of the city.

“Major Li, what's going on?” Gu Qing Shan questioned.

Li Da Jun hurriedly answered: “This noise is from the Demonized Steel-winged Falcons, the type of birds the enemy uses to relay orders”

The four-armed twin-headed ape seemed to have realized something, looked down on them with a strange gaze and spoke: 「 Humans, pitiable humans 」

Leaving those words, it turned around and ran without even bothering to look back.

It fled at such an impressive speed that it was already out of sight in mere seconds.

Everyone was stunned.

What's going on?

Soon, everyone discovered that it wasn't just the four-armed twin-headed ape, but the other apocalyptic monsters had also turned around and fled the city.

“Extract the satellite images, I want to see the situation!” the woman in military uniform declared.

A soldier ran in from afar, placed a simple satellite receiver from his back on the ground, and connected to a satellite in space.

“It requires your authentication, General” the soldier said.

The woman walked forward and faced her amber-colored iris into the retina scanner while also placing her hand on a pad.

Three.

Two.

One.

Authentication complete!

An image was displayed on the electronic screen.

The soldier quickly operated the satellite surveillance tool to display the entire perimeter of the city.

Only to find countless monsters have gathered around the city, forming a closed encirclement that left no gaps.

They tightly surrounded the city to make sure that no one could leave this place.

The woman appeared confused and muttered: “They surrounded us but aren’t attacking, why? Have we perhaps received reinforcements—-- Major Li, has your [Order] reported anything out of the ordinary?”

Li Da Jun observed the screen in front of his eyes for a while, then replied: “My mission is only to keep up our defenses, other than that, there aren’t any other reports”

Temporarily, the flames of battle had snuffed.

There were no longer any sounds of combat or killing.

The Clown descended from above and took off his mask, then asked: “I still haven’t gotten warmed up yet, why did things already end?”

Zhang Ying Hao pondered: “There’s something strange going on...”

Gu Qing Shan’s gaze fell onto the woman.

—she was a relatively young woman with black hair and amber-colored eyes, she carried a sense of refreshing beauty as well as power fluctuations that wasn’t lacking compared to anyone. Although quite strangely, she wasn’t carrying any weapons at all.

This is the innate Deity of [Chaos]?

Gu Qing Shan silently thought.

...

At the same time.

At an extremely distant location from this city.

The human world alliance's headquarters.

Everyone was busy preparing something.

[Grizzly One here, requesting permission to carry out the top-secret mission]

"Copy that. Permission granted. Terminal 3's gate is engaging, please check your reserve fuel and ammo one last time"

[Grizzly One reporting, everything is ready]

"In three seconds, you may begin to take off!"

"Three"

"Two"

"One"

"Lift off!"

With a sonic boom, a fighter jet shot out from the base and headed towards the horizon.

...

"Then, we're currently trapped in this city?" Gu Qing Shan asked.

"That's right. Gu Qing Shan, I know that you and your friends are people from this city, and you've only just recently awoken your abilities; normally, you should undergo a period of training and mentoring, but we don't have the time for that now. I ask you, are you willing to join the human world alliance's army to fight against the apocalyptic monsters?" the woman asked.

Gu Qing Shan appeared anxious and nervous, asking her in return: "Can we really? To protect our home, we were going to ask you to do so in the first place"

The woman smiled and replied: "Of course, your identities have been proven to be clean, and from how you coordinated to kill that snake, I can see what you're powerful. We're in desperate need of new blood like you"

Gu Qing Shan exchanged glances with Zhang Ying Hao and Ye Fei Li.

""We're willing"" the three of them answered in unison.

The woman nodded, appearing pleased.

"Very well, I am the human world alliance army's Eastern continent Xia country's Major General of the Southwestern army, Ye Ru Xi"

The female general offered them her hand.

"General Ye, how will we be arranged now?"

After shaking her hand, Gu Qing Shan asked.

“Since you were talents recruited by Major Li Da Jun, you can follow under him for now and learn about some superhuman advanced knowledge, while also preparing yourselves to enter combat at any moment”

“Understood”

“As for your military ranks. Although you’ve contributed greatly today, there’s always a long process before military promotion, let’s not consider it for now, they will come in due time”

“Roger”

Seeing how cooperative the three of them were, Ye Ru Xi couldn’t help but nod.

She smiled at the three of them and prepared to leave.

After taking a few steps, she suddenly stopped, appeared a bit hesitant, then turned back to Gu Qing Shan: “Gu Qing Shan, do you know how to use a sword?”

Gu Qing Shan was surprised.

Zhang Ying Hao and Ye Fei Li both had strange looks on their faces.

This question is quite interesting.

Gu Qing Shan nodded: “This humble one had studied the sword for a long time, I’ve basically mastered all of the foundation knowledge”

Ye Ru Xi asked: “Then your sword—— can I take a look at it?”

The three of them were all stunned.

Ye Ru Xi also felt a bit embarrassed from her question and shook her head: “My apologies, I’ve been rude”

Please support our website and read on novelbold

With that, she left.

Gu Qing Shan thought of a few things.

He felt an indescribable feeling.

It feels like I’ve experienced this same feeling before.

At this point, Li Da Jun carried four portions of military rations over, handing one each to the three of them.

“We don’t know what would happen next. For now let’s eat, then reorganize ourselves on the spot and wait for orders” Li Da Jun opened his own portion and began wolfing it down.

“Roger” the three of them answered at once.

A large number of civilians were still slowly moving along, all of them heading towards the company's temporary base.

Gu Qing Shan, Zhang Ying Hao, and other soldiers remained in the destroyed city, eating their meals where they sat.

Gu Qing Shan ripped open the simple ration bag and examined the items inside.

This ration contained microwaved rice with braised pork, cold steamed peas with meat, sour geese soup, a portion of cake, some dried rations, fruits, chocolate, tea bags, coffee, sugar, salt, and even a bag of cumin powder.

Ye Fei Li and Zhang Ying Hao also ripped their bags open.

"I say" Zhang Ying Hao joked around, "If not for those monsters, I would have thought we'd just joined a survival camping club"

Gu Qing Shan picked up his spoon and began eating.

"Major Li, what kind of weapon does General Ye use?" he asked while eating.

"Barehanded, she's really impressive" Li Da Jun praised.

"Barehanded? That's truly impressive, then, what's the most impressive thing our human world alliance army has?" Gu Qing Shan then asked.

Li Da Jun opened his eyes wide at him, then naturally answered: "Carriers of [Order], Professionals, both of these are the most effective means against those apocalyptic monsters"

"Not that" Gu Qing Shan laughed and explained: "I was asking about technological weapons we had before the Apocalypse"

"Ah, you're asking about weapons. Say, little Gu, you don't even know about something like that?" Li Da Jun appeared doubtful.

Gu Qing Shan lowered his head: "I haven't studied much, already started working at the docks since I was 12, so I don't know a lot"

Seeing his despondent appearance, Li Da Jun was a bit embarrassed.

"Ah, it's ok even if you haven't studied much. You're strong enough, you can always study by yourself later on"

"Right, about your question, the most powerful weapon we humans have ever created would naturally be nuclear bombs"

Gu Qing Shan seemed confused: "Then why aren't we using nuclear bombs to attack these monsters?"

"It's useless" Li Da Jun lowered his voice: "Those scientists say that there's some sort of power suppression. They said that with our current level of technology, it would be impossible for us to understand the principles behind this"

"In short, it doesn't do anything to the monsters?"

“Yup, that’s exactly it, that’s why the army is reliant on us carriers of [Order]” he looked at them, then added: “And Professionals like you”

Gu Qing Shan exchanged glances with Zhang Ying Hao and Ye Fei Li.

Indeed, this situation was the exact same as their homeworld.

Technological weapons of mass destruction had no effect.

Zhang Ying Hao whispered: “Impartial Goddess seemed to have come up with a way around this, Liao Xing should know”

Gu Qing Shan replied: “In our current situation, there’s no way to contact Liao Xing”

At this point, several soldiers who carried communication receivers ran up to them and saluted: “Major Li, there has been a break in our communication signal. We don’t know what’s the issue, please confirm, sir”

“Where did the signal break?” Major Li asked without looking up.

“The entire city, sir. We’ve tried many times but couldn’t establish communication with any superiors or even outside the city” the soldier appeared a bit frightful as he answered.

“WHAT!? LET’S GO! HURRY!”

Li Da Jun threw his rations to one side and stood up to follow the soldiers.

Gu Qing Shan, Zhang Ying Hao, and Ye Fei Li silently continued having their meal, but Li Da Jun still hadn’t returned when they were finished.

It was now already twilight.

Gu Qing Shan suddenly said: “I feel... a bit uneasy”

Zhang Ying Hao replied: “Me as well”

He raised his arm for them to two.

All of his hairs were standing on their ends.

“I would only feel something like this when I’m on the verge of life and death” Zhang Ying Hao explained.

Ye Fei Li sighed: “I can’t feel anything at all— -- but I was thinking about something— -- why was that Ye Ru Xi interested in your sword? Have you thought of anything?”

“There was a period of time when I wished to obtain a sword, during which I also felt like she did earlier” Gu Qing Shan replied.

Gu Qing Shan continued his train of thought.

And it wasn’t until I took the sword of that dead cultivator that I awakened.

Awakened!

Perhaps, Ye Ru Xi is the same?

Does she want to obtain a sword in order to awaken her identity as a Deity of [Chaos]?

Gu Qing Shan turned to the void of space and asked: "Did you feel anything earlier?"

None of the swords answered.

Only the Chao Yin sword gave off a short vibration.

"She was looking at you?" Gu Qing Shan asked in surprise.

The Chao Yin sword vibrated again.

Gu Qing Shan slowly frowned.

Why did Ye Ru Xi only look at one sword?

What did he sense from the Chao Yin sword?

Ye Fei Li then said: "Never mind the swords. Now that we've found her, what should we do next?"

"Either help her awaken or bring her with us; both of these options require us to first earn her trust"
Zhang Ying Hao replied.

Gu Qing Shan released his inner sight to observe the surroundings.

Everything was calm and normal.

Ye Ru Xi and two other Generals stood together, all of them solemnly discussing something.

In front of them, every soldier from the communication squad was attempting to contact the world outside the city.

Li Da Jun was lying under a certain machine, busy opening it up.

Why do I keep feeling something amiss...?

The monsters have surrounded the city.

Communication has been cut.

The four-armed twin-headed ape suddenly retreated.

—where exactly does the issue lie?

Unfortunately, there's too little information, I can't come up with any answers at all.

Gu Qing Shan pondered for a bit before standing up:

"Let's go and take a look at the giant snake's body, maybe we'll find some clues"

...

Night fell.

The fighter jet was quickly flying through the sky under the shroud of night.

Occasionally, some small apocalyptic monsters who could fly approached to examine the situation, but then quickly left.

Very unusually, they didn't seem like they wanted to attack this jet, instead it seemed like they were protecting it.

On the plane.

Through his communicator, the pilot was making his final report:

“Grizzle One had entered the maximum firing range. Strike can be conducted, requesting orders”

A voice responded from his communicator:

[Open fire]

“Roger”

Communication then ceased.

The pilot unlocked the firing system, took a deep breath, then muttered: “May God bless those poor innocent people”

He clicked the flashy red button.

A tactical nuclear missile was shot from the jet, howling as it flew across the sky towards the faraway city.

Chapter 1193

Gu Qing Shan, Zhang Ying Hao, and Ye Fei Li crouched down in front of the giant snake's body.

Quite a few scientists were collecting samples from it next to them, as well as some soldiers to guard them.

But since Gu Qing Shan's trio were both Professionalists and people of the military, in accordance with everyone's tacit understanding of the rules, no one bothered them.

——it was in fact encouraged for newly recruited Professionalists to come into contact with apocalyptic monsters as much as possible, allowing them to surpass their psychological fears, discover the monster's weaknesses, and better deal with their threat.

This was common sense.

Ye Fei Li reached his hand forward.

He wiped a bit of the giant snake's blood and licked it.

“The blood is filled with power—— feels like magic, but it feels like there's something other than magic in here” he commented.

This was something that only he had the courage to do because his constitution allowed him to not be corroded by external forces.

Gu Qing Shan manifested a few blades of sword qi and sliced off a piece of snake meat.

“Can it be eaten?” Zhang Ying Hao swallowed his saliva.

“Didn’t you just finish an entire portion of military ration?” Gu Qing Shan held the piece of meat in his hand and carefully examined it.

“What I’m looking forward to isn’t the snake meat, but your cooking” Zhang Ying Hao flattered him.

He couldn’t be blamed, because Gu Qing Shan’s cooking always left people wanting more.

“Can’t!” Gu Qing Shan shook his head, “This snake’s entire body is full of venom, which makes it hard to treat— if I actually spent the effort to clean it completely, the meat would lose most of its flavor as well”

“Hah” Zhang Ying Hao was a bit disappointed.

The two of them exchanged glances.

Although they were joking around, they both noticed a sense of solemnity from the other’s voice.

An invisible pressure had completely filled the air.

This sensation couldn’t be noticed by ordinary people, but those with exceptionally sharp intuition would receive some precognition from the mystics.

“...I feel like I’m standing in front of a brewing sea storm” Gu Qing Shan’s expression was completely sullen as he muttered.

“I’m the same”

Zhang Ying Hao stood up and anxiously looked around.

The troops had split up into several groups, some still maintaining order, some patrolling the city, while some were reorganizing themselves on the spot.

The evacuated people were slowly moving towards the temporary base in a neat and orderly manner.

Ye Ru Xi was standing with several army commanders, observing as Li Da Jun and his men tried to fix the communication device.

There were no monster attacks.

Everything was normal.

“Strange... it’s very rare for my intuition to fail, but then where’s the problem coming from?”

Zhang Ying Hao wiped some cold sweat from his face, feeling nothing but confused.

The world in front of him slowly became heavy and stagnant, the stifling pressure from earlier had gotten even worse.

Gu Qing Shan also couldn't endure it and directly summoned the twin swords Heaven and Earth from the void of space, wielding them in his hands.

He could feel death approaching!

The two of them abruptly stood up and observed their surroundings.

The night wind was slightly warm.

The troops had started to distribute food to the civilians.

With something to fill their stomachs, the civilians slowly settled down as well.

Everything was normal.

"Damn it, what exactly is it?" Zhang Ying Hao cursed.

Ye Fei Li was still crouched on the ground, then suddenly perked his ears to listen with a confused expression on his face.

Gu Qing Shan immediately noticed this and asked: "What's the matter?"

Ye Fei Li explained: "Something is flying towards us"

"What is it? A monster?" Zhang Ying Hao asked.

"No, it's artificial, almost like... a plane? But it's a lot faster than I imagine it would be" Ye Fei Li replied.

Gu Qing Shan shivered for the blink of an eye.

That isn't a plane.

With the monster encirclement, planes cannot possibly go through.

Could it be...

The demon ape's last words resounded by his ears:

...

「Humans, what pitiable humans」

...

That apocalyptic monster had clearly intended to fight to the death, but then suddenly gave up on killing Ye Ru Xi and casually retreated.

Pitiable.

That description...

In that instant, Gu Qing Shan's expression completely warped.

The air was slightly shivering.

A low-frequency shriek was resounding from the air above.

10 seconds.

No, it's too fast—

7 seconds.

We only have 7 seconds!

Gu Qing Shan completely discarded all of his other thoughts.

“Ying Hao, I think it’s a nuclear warhead!”

He roared, then heavily thrust the Earth sword in his hand into the ground.

Secret Art, [Drawn Shadow]!

A boundless array of black sword images suddenly bloomed, pierced through the concrete ground, and bore deeply down below.

At this point, Zhang Ying Hao also realized what was happening.

“FUCK—”

He cursed, propped, the assault rifle on his shoulder, and exchanged its nozzle for a larger one, then aimed at the sky.

One second.

Two seconds.

Without hesitation, Zhang Ying Hao pulled the trigger.

Bang!

The resounding heavy gunshot surprised everyone around.

Zhang Ying Hao was forced two steps backward by the intense recoil, after which he let himself fall down—

Rumble rumble rumble—

The earth was constantly trembling.

After Gu Qing Shan’s strike, surprised screams resounded all over.

In a 5-mile radius of him, every soldier, General, scientist, and civilian, fell into the crater he had just created.

Gu Qing Shan’s heart sank.

Not enough!

This isn’t nearly deep enough!

He swung the Earth sword and thrust it into the earth once again.

“STOP! Gu Qing Shan!”

Ye Ru Xi shouted.

Because of how abrupt it was, quite a few people were injured from the fall, some of them were even bleeding or had broken arms and legs.

Ye Ru Xi put an unconscious civilian down, completely furious.

She rushed like a blurred image towards Gu Qing Shan.

Zhang Ying Hao tried to stop her but was struck by a cluster of grey fog that emanated from her body and sent flying into the inner wall of the crater.

Ye Fei Li unleashed dozens of red spikes to stop her but was also easily dispatched.

At this point.

From a point far above them, a sharp high-pitched noise could be heard.

Everyone looked up.

From the horizon, a ball of fire created from intense light even more blinding than the sun instantly illuminated the entire city.

The world became silent.

Even the military personnel’s expressions changed.

A nuclear warhead!

Why is there a nuclear warhead here!?

Gu Qing Shan’s face also twisted.

Although Zhang Ying Hao had managed to hit the nuclear warhead from a distance——

Please support our website and read on novelbold

It was still a nuclear bomb!

Gu Qing Shan circulated his spirit energy to unleash another sword seal.

Secret Art, [Torrent]!

“AAAAAAA, GET DOWN!”

He shouted.

The crater that was already quite deep sunk down several meters more.

The people in the crater fell down again.

Gu Qing Shan used the sword to prop himself up, completely soaked in sweat, barely still standing.

Foundation realm cultivators.

Only had so much spirit energy.

As he unleashed his full strength just now, he exhausted all of his powers.

Fortunately, a crater this deep should be barely enough to escape the heat and the first round of shockwaves from the nuclear bomb at the horizon.

“Don’t look at the explosion!” Ye Ru Xi loudly shouted.

But her voice was completely obscured by the sound of the explosion, leaving no one able to hear her.

Ye Ru Xi stomped her feet to leap up and threw a punch at the opening of the crater.

Layers upon layers of grey fog manifested to cover the entire hole.

Even the intense light outside had been blocked out, leaving the inside of the crater in complete darkness.

The earth trembled.

Shockwaves were beginning to form.

The mushroom cloud instantly reached several thousand meters high.

Zhang Ying Hao climbed out from the dirt, spat out some sand, and tossed the Card in his hand forward.

Poof!

Over a dozen dimly glowing worms appeared.

“Please help me solidify this place, thank you” Zhang Ying Hao said.

The worms nodded, then quickly scattered into the walls of the crater and did their work.

Hoh— — hoh— — hoh— —

The howling wind created by the shockwaves resounded throughout, followed by numerous desperate screams together with the sound of crashing and collapsing buildings.

Everyone now understood what was going on.

Quite a few people began to cry.

— — — their family members were still outside, which meant that it was impossible for them to survive.

They were the most fortunate, as they had fallen into the crater that Gu Qing Shan created, and the nuclear bomb was detonated prematurely at the horizon by Zhang Ying Hao that they managed to survive.

Ye Ru Xi walked up to Gu Qing Shan and patted his shoulder: “I blamed you wrongly”

Gu Qing Shan was dead tired, so he only nodded without replying.

Ye Ru Xi turned to the commanders.

Every commander had ashen expressions on their face, their hearts completely withered.

Nuclear weapons can't kill monsters, so whoever fired that nuclear warhead was aiming to kill everyone here.

Why?

Why did they do such a thing?

Ye Ru Xi tried her best to maintain outward calm and told the military men: "Don't worry everyone, we will definitely not forgive the culprit. Please endure it for now until this calamity had passed"

"I swear that I will——"

She was interrupted by a loud shout.

"KILL HER!"

Li Da Jun exclaimed.

Several carriers of [Order] acted at once, ambushing Ye Ru Xi who had her guard down.

Clang! Clang! Clang! Clang!

A 7-colored shield protected Ye Ru Xi.

At the same time, Ye Fei Li wielded the Forgetting River Soul Flaying Hook and blew a whistle.

FWEET——

Instantly, everyone became frozen.

Sound-based technique, [Forgetting River Returning Souls]!

This was a Divine Skill that Ye Fei Li could perform through the Forgetting River Soul Flaying Hook!

A bright red flash flickered through the air.

Several screams resounded.

"Leave one alive!" Gu Qing Shan said.

"Don't worry" Ye Fei Li appeared from the red flash.

He pinned Li Da Jun in front of Ye Ru Xi with one hand.

The other carriers of [Order] had already been killed.

One breath's worth of time had passed.

Everyone returned to normal.

Ye Ru Xi was stunned and questioned in disbelief: "Major Li, why—- did you want to kill me?"

Li Da Jun was bloody all over, but he suddenly laughed: "You damned apostle of the Apocalypse, it was you who doomed everyone in this city"

He was both laughing and crying at the same time: “[Order] had told us, you are the seed of calamity, you will bring about an even more terrifying end compared to the Apocalypse, you must die!”

Ye Ru Xi froze.

Her complexion completely pale and muttered: “I don’t understand what you’re saying, I’ve always stood against the Apocalypse, I’ve always stood in the frontlines, why must I be killed? What is the reason!?”

Her voice was starting to sway, becoming a bit unpredictable.

“Don’t pretend, General, what that grey fog of yours had caused, are you saying you don’t remember?”

Ye Ru Xi kept her mouth shut and lowered her head.

Li Da Jun stared straight at her and spoke full of regret: “Ye Ru Xi, you are too powerful. If not to kill you, why would the alliance army have used a nuclear weapon?”

“Regretfully, you still managed to survive”

He turned to Ye Fei Li and Gu Qing Shan, as well as Zhang Ying Hao who was controlling the worms.

These three!

If I can go back in time, I would never have recruited them!

Damn it! Damn it all!

Gu Qing Shan caught a canned drink that Ye Fei Li tossed to him, popped it open, and gulped it down.

After regaining some strength, he stood up and told Ye Ru Xi: “There’s not much time, the radioactive fall out will soon reach the ground, and the monsters have still surrounded the city. We don’t have anywhere to escape right now, so we have to come up with a solution soon”

Ye Ru Xi just stood there, completely motionless as if her soul itself had been stripped from her body.

...

At another location.

The human world alliance’s HQ.

All of humanity’s elites were gathered here.

“The nuclear warhead was prematurely detonated, that seed of calamity survived” someone stated.

“I’ve also received confirmation from [Order], that is, unfortunately, the truth of what happened” someone else replied.

Silence.

No one said anything.

It wasn’t until a few moments later that someone tried asking:

“Then... should we continue with the follow-up plan?”

“Agreed”

“There’s no other way, this is the number one priority of [Order], agreed”

“Agreed”

“Right, if one doesn’t do it... we’ll fire a few more!”

“All votes ‘yes’, carry it out”

Three minutes later.

[Fox Squad, requesting permission to carry out the top-secret mission]

“Copy that. Permission granted. The gates of Terminal 3, 4, 5, 6, and 9 are engaging, please check your reserve fuel and ammo one last time”

[Report, everything ready]

“Copy that. In three seconds, you may begin to take off!”

“Three”

“Two”

“One”

“Lift off!”

With a resounding sonic boom, the entire fighter jet squad shot out from the base and headed towards the horizon.

Chapter 1194

Night.

Six fighter jets emanating a streak of flaming tail soared through the dark sky.

Their communicators rang out all at once.

[Zi-]

[Fox One, Fox Two, please proceed from the Southeast direction]

[Fox Four, Fox Five, you will proceed from the Northwest direction of the city]

[Fox Six, Fox Seven, perform a U-turn, be ready for your orders!]

[Attention, wait for your exact orders, this strike must be conducted in unison]

[Do you copy?]

The six pilots answered at once: “Copy!”

The six fighter jets scattered in the air in different directions.

...

At the same time.

The surrounded city.

The hole in the middle.

Ye Ru Xi looked around.

Everyone—

All of her comrades who had been fighting by her sides were displaying distant expressions.

“I... simply wanted to save...”

She muttered with difficulty.

Li Da Jun laid on the ground, staring closely into the void of space, then suddenly grinned.

His mouth and nose were full of blood as he declared with a cruel expression: “General Ye, so long as you are alive, they will never stop bombarding this place. If you truly want to save this world, quickly go ahead and die”

Bam!

Gu Qing Shan used the side of his sword to hit him above his neck and knocked him unconscious.

Ye Ru Xi slowly turned towards her other comrades.

“Colonel Zhang, what do you think?”

She asked with a calm voice.

Hearing that, a certain male officer displayed a complicated expression.

“Ru Xi, you should know” he tried his best to pick his words, then slowly replied, “I’m actually a carrier of [Order] as well, and you are currently everyone’s priority target, you must die”

“But I can’t kill you, nor do I want to fight to death with you, so quickly leave already”

His officer turned his face away, then muttered: “If you remain, everyone here will truly lose their lives”

Ye Ru Xi fell silent.

That final statement was the most important one.

She suddenly turned to Gu Qing Shan’s trio and asked: “Why did you help me just now?”

Zhang Ying Hao was currently drinking a canned drink when he answered: “When you see injustice”

Ye Fei Li was also drinking and followed up as he raised his can: “You help in whatever way you can”

Gu Qing Shan replied in a solemn tone: "If you want to leave, you had better do it quickly. After a while, the radioactive fallout will rain down together with dust, it would be hard to escape even if you wanted to by that point"

Saying so, he also gulped down the second canned drink in his hand.

His spirit energy was recovering rapidly.

Ye Fei Li's ability is truly excellent, no wonder even Boss wanted to remain with us.

Ye Ru Xi observed the three strangers in front of her, then her old comrades, as if wanting to keep this scene forever in mind.

"I'll be going, farewell"

She leapt straight to the sky and disappeared into the grey fog above.

"Fei Li, give chase" Gu Qing Shan said.

"Got it"

Ye Fei Li caught the other two with his hands, spread his bright-red wings wide and carried them with him.

...

"Why did you follow me?"

Ye Ru Xi was quickly flying in front of them and asked without turning around.

Gu Qing Shan's trio was closely following her.

"General Ye, you're powerful, if you can cooperate with us, we'd make a considerable force—— in the end, our goal is simply to survive, I hope you'll understand" Gu Qing Shan replied.

Survive.

Ye Ru Xi was surprised and didn't answer him for now.

On the way.

The four of them continued forward.

The ground was completely scorched, countless charred corpses filled the entire zone.

Ruined buildings were still burning with smoke and fire, the city seemed like it had just been plunged into a sea of flames, leaving behind only the purgatory aftermath.

Ye Ru Xi's gaze passed through these corpses.

She wiped the corner of her eyes.

"Is this all my fault? Is my very existence wrong?" he questioned herself.

Gu Qing Shan sighed.

I didn't think that [Order] would be willing to cause such mass destruction simply to erase this unawakened Deity of [Chaos].

Then how would they be any different from an Apocalypse?

Gu Qing Shan answered her: "It's not that you're at fault, but rather humanity itself has always had many faults. This is simply an eternal truth, there's no need for you to blame yourself"

Please support our website and read on novelbold

Ye Ru Xi asked: "Can we win against these faults?"

Gu Qing Shan replied: "It would be very difficult, humanity had always been this way, there is no such thing as an end"

Ye Ru Xi dejectedly asked: "If there is no chance of success from the very start, what meaning is there for our actions in the first place?"

Gu Qing Shan stated: "The ultimate outcome is irrelevant, and so is the hearsay of million others"

Ye Ru Xi remained silent, then sorrowfully laughed:

"Who would've thought, the one who would accompany me on my path would actually be a stranger"

She continued heading forward but did not fly as quickly as earlier.

Gu Qing Shan sensed the direction of the wind, then said: "This is currently our best chance to escape. We should fly perpendicular to the direction of the wind; this would make sure that we avoid most of the radioactive fallout"

Ye Ru Xi paused.

The four of them changed directions and continued heading forward.

"Hey, Qing Shan, I have a question" Ye Fei Li said.

"Go head" Gu Qing Shan replied.

"Ying Hao's shot clearly hit the nuclear bomb, but when something like that is damaged, it shouldn't be able to detonate— that's how I've always seen it in the movies"

"Those movies you watch only showed unarmed nuclear bombs" Zhang Ying Hao replied.

"Is there a difference?" Ye Fei Li asked.

Zhang Ying Hao answered: "Keep this in mind, you can never underestimate the cruelty of the human mind"

Gu Qing Shan explained: "From what I've seen of history, in-flight nuclear warheads are always programmed with a certain function when it gets within a certain range of its target"

Zhang Ying Hao continued: "When the casing of the nuclear warhead endures a certain amount of kinetic energy – like how it was shot earlier, or if it touches the ground – that function would trigger within 0.01s of the impact and detonate the nuclear bomb – bang!"

Gu Qing Shan followed up: "This is called better safe than sorry"

"Also known as massacring a city to not release a single person" Zhang Ying Hao added.

Ye Fei Li seriously pondered this, then couldn't help himself from shivering.

Gu Qing Shan abruptly stopped.

He saw a large number of military vehicles and devices that had been knocked over on the side of the road.

"Wait a moment"

He ran towards them.

Zhang Ying Hao shouted from behind: "They're probably useless now"

Gu Qing Shan entered the car, searched around for a bit to find a map.

He took the map back to Ye Ru Xi.

"Where are we now?"

Ye Ru Xi examined the map and pointed at a certain point.

Gu Qing Shan observed it a bit and muttered: "Although the monsters have surrounded the city, there's a large river not too far away from us"

"We won't be able to cross" Ye Ru Xi replied, "There are powerful aquatic monsters in the water"

"Is that so" Gu Qing Shan said.

Ye Ru Xi said: "If we want to break through the encirclement, it would be better to do so on land. This way we would be able to use our powers. If we enter the water, we'd be restrained by it and be killed more easily instead"

Gu Qing Shan suddenly stopped.

"What's the matter?" Zhang Ying Hao asked.

"Nothing" Gu Qing Shan smiled.

Zhang Ying Hao looked at him, then at his arm.

His hairs stood on their ends again.

"What the fuck... Old Gu, take a look at this" Zhang Ying Hao muttered.

"Wait a moment"

Gu Qing Shan replied, then gazed at the void of space.

Lines of glowing text appeared from the void of space:

[Worlds Apocalypse Online: Living Beings Order is attempting to attach itself to you]

[Due to the War God UI's prevention, attachment had failed]

[The Order had requested a telepathic connection; would you like to connect?]

Gu Qing Shan hesitated for a moment before replying: "Allow it"

Right away, a voice filled with holy presence resounded in Gu Qing Shan's ears:

[Entity of unknown background, listen]

[You definitely cannot allow the Deity of Chaos: Ye Ru Xi to awaken, you must kill her, immediately! Immediately!]

Gu Qing Shan questioned in a heavy voice: "What would happen if she awakened? If you are the [Living Beings Order], why did you massacre millions of living beings in this world?"

[I had no other choice!]

The voice suddenly raised up high and replied with a solemn tone: [If they were any other Deity of Chaos, Under this current apocalyptic situation, the Order would not have acted that way. This Order's number one priority is the survival of living beings]

[But not her, she definitely must not awaken!]

"Why?" Gu Qing Shan couldn't help but question.

[Because among all the seeds of Chaos, she is one of decisive importance]

[She is the Deity of Chaos summoning that not even the Reality Gate can stop]

[To eradicate the Apocalypse, she would summon entities to destroy all living beings in existence]

[When there are no longer any living beings, so there would no longer be any Apocalypse]

[To destroy it all, this is the meaning of her existence]

[You must not allow her to awaken!]

When Gu Qing Shan was about to speak, Ye Fei Li caught his hand.

"Not good!"

Ye Fei Li hurriedly explained: "That noise from earlier— the noise of nuclear warheads! Six of them in total!"

Chapter 1195

Outside the city.

At the Southwest, Northwest, Southeast, Northeast, Northern, and Southern directions, each had a corresponding fighter jet zooming in location.

"Zi—"

"Fox Squad reporting to HQ, we're all in position"

“Repeat, we’re all in position. Over”

Another voice responded.

[Orders have been given, immediately carry out Operation ‘Witch Hunt’]

[Attention, this is not a drill, the survival of humanity lies in your hands, immediately carry out Operation ‘Witch Hunt’]

[Zi—]

“Copy that, engaging in combat”

“Preparing to fire in 5 seconds”

“5”

“4”

“3”

“2”

“1”

“Fire”

“———may God be on our side; may our descendants forgive our acts today”

Six tactical nukes drew white streaks in the sky as they shot towards the city from different directions.

...

At the same time.

In the city.

Inside the large crater that Gu Qing Shan created.

“Colonel Zhang, thank you” Li Da Jun said.

He had been carried up to a sketcher and currently being treated.

“No need to thank me” Colonel Zhang replied: “If General Ru Xi remained here, all of us would die, I merely did it for my own survival”

The two of them looked at the military men and civilians around themselves.

Li Da Jun sighed and said: “Not even a nuclear bomb managed to kill her, I wonder what other solutions have the alliance’s big brass came up with to eliminate her”

Colonel Zhang replied: “That’s not for us to worry about, we need only stay here and wait for further reinforcements”

Hearing that, Li Da Jun appeared glad.

Indeed, regardless of what happened, I survived.

...

At the same time.

In the city.

The four who were walking through the streets abruptly stopped.

Ye Fei Li shouted with a panicked expression: "From all around the city, six nuclear warheads are heading towards us!"

Immediately.

Gu Qing Shan muttered in his mind: "War God UI, kick the [Order] out"

[Understood]

The voice of [Order] vanished.

At the moment, there weren't any other [Orders] here, nor were there any people, so Gu Qing Shan was confident that no one would be able to track them.

Wind.

The wind was resonating from afar.

Some sound faintly reverberated throughout the air.

The sound gradually grew louder, eventually sounding like something was ripping through the air as it flew.

Zhang Ying Hao instinctively raised his gun, but helplessly put it back down.

There were 6 nuclear bombs.

With his current suppressed strength, he wouldn't be able to hit all of them.

Even if he did, it would still be useless because of how close the nuclear warheads were to the city. If they were prematurely detonated in the air right now, the resulting explosion would be enough to cause a chain reaction that destroys the entire city.

No one would be able to survive such destruction.

Zhang Ying Hao's gaze swept through all the surrounding structures, then suddenly shouted.

"Quick, there's a library over there!" he shouted.

Everyone followed where he was pointing.

Only to see a large building with its doors wide open.

A library!

Compared to other structures, libraries are built to have greater stability and sturdiness; partly because they need to store a large number of books, precious old books, as well as serving thousands of readers at once.

Gu Qing Shan immediately said: "Go, let's hope there's a basement!"

The four of them hurriedly ran.

By the time they reached the entrance of the library, the world outside had abruptly changed.

The night faded away.

The entire world became pure white.

Please support our website and read on novelbold

Intense light drowned the entire city, down to the very last nook and cranny.

Gu Qing Shan and Zhang Ying Hao closed the door right as they entered.

The light was blocked out.

"Hurry! Hurry! Hurry!" Ye Fei Li urged them.

Ye Ru Xi had already rushed inside before anyone else to find a suitable place to hide.

"I remember, this library doesn't have an underground basement!" Ye Ru Xi loudly shouted.

At the very next second.

The entire roof of the library was blown off.

The joint explosion of 6 tactical nukes caused indescribably huge shockwaves.

If one could observe from above, they would find that the entire city was quickly being erased from the map.

Even though the library was built to be sturdy, it couldn't possibly survive such explosive force.

"So in the end, I would still have to die in this city"

Ye Ru Xi sorrowfully chuckled.

Intense light descended from above.

Followed by intense heat.

——heat that had reached an incredible 100 million degrees C, instantly vaporizing all liquid and subliming all solids into gas.

All living beings melted away.

The air then became ionized and turned into plasma, emanating an endless amount of electromagnetic force, shooting from and towards the horizon like streaks of scattered blue light.

Being struck by 6 nuclear bombs at once, all hope of survival for every living being in the city was mercilessly erased.

Even the civilians and military men hiding inside the crater had been vaporized by the intense heat and vanished, not a single thing of them remained.

Devastated, destroyed, eradicated.

The resounding explosion completely overwhelmed every other sound and spread through the clouds of fallout.

The world fell into chaos.

Time slowly passed.

Until finally.

Everything gradually settled down.

But this was only an illusion, as the gigantic cluster of black clouds in the sky would slowly drift towards the ground, enveloping everything below, and turning this entire area into no man's land.

Not even ruins would remain of this place.

——including the library where Gu Qing Shan's group had hidden, not a single structure remained in this city.

The ground had dried completely from the heat, dead land stretched for hundreds of miles.

Not a single living being remained.

Dong! Dong! Dong!

The four-armed twin-headed demon ape and other powerful apocalyptic monsters began to show up.

They were rapidly wandering the scorched land in search of their target.

「 In this situation, that seed of [Chaos] surely could not have survived 」 the demon ape judged.

Behind it, a pack of wolves whose bodies were engulfed in flames stepped forward.

「 Indeed 」 the alpha wolf replied, 「 Even with my heightened sensitivity to flesh and blood, I do not discover any living beings 」

The demon ape stated: 「 I do not understand why humans would act so cruelly to their own race—— but this is what we want to happen 」

The alpha wolf pondered: 「 Those humans who carry [Order] are most likely also interested in the results of this strike, but they wouldn't be able to enter as deep as we can, it will most likely take a very long time 」

「 And such, this is the perfect chance for us to begin a new round of destruction 」 the demon ape followed up.

It turned around and brought its subordinates outside the city.

Other apocalyptic monsters were still searching the area, but even without thinking about it, the search soon reached a conclusion.

—*there were no longer any humans here.*

This was the opportunity.

While the humans are still paying attention to this destroyed city, we apocalyptic monsters will converge towards other cities, begin our attack anew, and continue the Apocalypse.

Paradoxical creatures like humans are naturally rejected by the natural Laws themselves, they deserve to go extinct.

After the four-armed twin-headed demon ape left.

The alpha wolf also led its pack away.

More and more apocalyptic monsters were leaving the city as time passed.

They were calling out to their comrades and proceeded towards other cities.

...

Inside the great river at the border of the city.

Although it was relatively distant from the inner city, the flow and shape of this thousand-meter-long river had also been altered by the nuclear explosion.

The river gradually settled down.

—*the aquatic monsters who had sealed off the water were also heading towards other cities following the flow of the river.*

On top of the river, countless dead aquatic animals were flowing along the water surface with the apocalyptic monsters, helping them mask their movements.

The river was still.

There was only a little bit of movement underneath the murky riverbed.

A several-hundred-meter-long giant snake was hiding motionlessly under the sand and mud.

It was an apocalyptic monster.

It was the snake king.

Chapter 1196

Rewinding time a bit.

At the very moment that the library's roof was blown off.

"Don't move!"

Gu Qing Shan sent this voice to the other three.

His body transformed abruptly into a giant snake that swallowed everyone at once.

The snake was several hundred meters long and instantly slithered out of the library through the roof.

In the sky, the scene of the 6 simultaneous nuclear explosions was being reflected in the snake's vertical eyes.

They seemed like 6 blinding suns in the sky!

The white light spread throughout the sky in every direction, dying the entire world white.

No matter the direction, all they could see was the color white.

The shockwaves would soon follow.

At the very next blink of the eye, the combined shockwave blast from the detonation of 6 nuclear bombs would manifest and destroy everything on the ground.

Although the giant snake wasn't afraid of the nuclear bomb, the intense impact would greatly hinder his movement.

Hisss!

In an instant.

The giant snake released his inner sight and abruptly lunged forward.

As the blinding white light erupted in the sky, he vanished.

Divine Skill, [Ground Shrink]!

With his current body, using this Divine Skill allowed him to bypass the long-distance to immediately reach the bank of the great river.

Quite a few apocalyptic monsters stood with their eyes closed above the water.

Although the light of the nuclear explosion couldn't kill them, it was enough blind their vision.

While the blinding light continued to erupt, the water of the river abruptly parted ways to reveal a direct path to the bottom.

The giant snake slithered in.

The river swiftly closed up behind him.

Despite how long it all seemed, everything occurred in the mere few blinks of an eye.

——at the next blink of an eye, the intense light had gradually faded away.

The world became visible once again.

The shockwaves from the 6 nuclear bombs began leveling the city.

The monsters opened their eyes again and silently observed the city being destroyed.

Until it was over.

The monsters began to search the leveled city for any traces of the seed of [Chaos].

Then they proceeded to march towards other cities.

Everything had been destroyed.

Only the giant snake remained hidden underneath the sandy riverbed, silently concealing itself.

It wasn't until all the monsters in the water had left along with the current that the giant snake began to move.

Swimming in the other direction——

He started to move against the current to search for a city that was upstream.

According to Ye Ru Xi, it was a city that had already been destroyed by the Apocalypse.

While the giant snake hurriedly slithered at the bottom of the river, all the water on its way parted ways to make sure that his traversal was smooth and without obstacles.

At this point, the apocalyptic monsters had already left.

——while the [Order] had been kicked out by Gu Qing Shan, so it wouldn't know about Ye Ru Xi's survival.

Due to the resulting radioactive fallout and electromagnetic interference from the explosions, humanity wouldn't be able to draw a definitive conclusion for now.

Because of that, this would be the best time for them to escape and move into the shadow.

An hour later.

Four people stood under the shade of a tree by the river, reorganizing themselves.

"If I had died in this backwater world, I wouldn't have been able to close my eyes" Zhang Ying Hao lit a cigarette for himself, then offered Gu Qing Shan one as well.

"No thanks to the cigarette, give me a bottle of liquor" Gu Qing Shan only took one drag before shaking his head and throwing the cigarette away.

Zhang Ying Hao then took out a bottle of strong liquor for him.

Gu Qing Shan popped the cork open and gulped down large swigs of the alcohol.

It was very dangerous just now.

Even more so than the time he had to face the 2 million demonized people.

A Foundation realm cultivator facing 6 nuclear bombs at once would essentially result in nothing but their death.

If he had died here, never mind Zhang Ying Hao, even Gu Qing Shan wouldn't be able to take it.

"Wait a minute, what did you mean by that? Could it be you aren't people of this world?" Ye Ru Xi sharply caught their conversation.

Zhang Ying Hao shrugged.

Gu Qing Shan admitted: "That's right, we're the same kind of person you are"

Ye Ru Xi froze.

"Same kind of people?" she repeated after him.

"That's right"

Gu Qing Shan recalled what the colonel had said in the crater.

—-those people feared Ye Ru Xi.

Ye Ru Xi seemed to have thought of something, her expression became a bit anxious and full of anticipation at the same time.

"Please elaborate, you had better not be lying to me" she stated.

Gu Qing Shan started: "You surely must have done something to cause your comrades to be so wary of you"

Ye Ru Xi appeared to be recalling the past as her emotions clearly deflated.

Gu Qing Shan took a step forward and looked straight into her eyes, continuing: "That occurrence, you would definitely never forget it, wouldn't you?"

"That's right, I can't, even if I wanted to" Ye Ru Xi didn't avoid Gu Qing Shan's gaze and faced it head-on.

Gu Qing Shan continued observing her and stated: "They fear you because of it; but believe me, we would never consider you to be different from ourselves"

—-World Technique, [Time Recollection]!

Instantly.

The world faded away from Gu Qing Shan's vision.

He found that he was standing in the middle of nothingness.

Countless curves manifested out of nowhere to form another world.

The inner city, a walking street, a school, a glorious yellow sunset.

In this yellow sunset, a long-haired girl was walking back home while carrying a backpack.

—-Ye Ru Xi's adolescence years.

Gu Qing Shan stood next to her, silently observing.

The [Order]'s words couldn't be fully trusted, so Gu Qing Shan had decided to personally take a look.

How mysterious.

Gu Qing Shan completely couldn't imagine why [Chaos] would place so much value on an unawakened Deity.

Comparatively, not even the Soul Shrieker who had spent countless years to bring about the advent of the Era of [Chaos] received this much attention.

What exactly did Ye Ru Xi do?

Gu Qing Shan followed behind the young girl as she continued walking.

The girl suddenly pulled out her phone, pondered, then mustered her courage to punch in a row of numbers:

"Hey~ mom, I won't make it back in time for dinner tonight"

"Hm, extra classes, yes, I'll get home when I'm done"

"Don't worry"

"Ok, I'll hang up now"

Please support our website and read on novelbold

The girl hung up, then displayed a delighted expression on her face.

She sped up and started to run towards a certain direction.

A few moments later.

The young girl reached the vicinity of a cinema.

"Hey! Over here!"

From afar, a voice called out.

Gu Qing Shan and the young girl both turned to that direction.

Only to find several other high school girls standing at the entrance to the cinema, waving towards the young Ye Ru Xi.

"Quickly, Ru Xi, the movie is about to begin!" one of the girls called out.

Ye Ru Xi smiled.

As she was about to head towards her friends, something unprecedented happened.

The earth began to tremble intensely.

The sky was enveloped in a crimson glow, followed by a declaration:

「 Humans, it is now your time to die 」

Asteroids began to rain from above.

It was literally raining, as there were too many asteroids to even count properly.

Boom!

One of the asteroids crashed into the square in front of the cinema.

Flames erupted.

A large crocodile crawled out from the crater of the asteroid; its cold eyes stared at those who stood around it.

It lightly turned its head and chomped.

Several people were caught in its large jaw, spilling blood instantly.

Everyone immediately panicked.

The sound of screams, cries, and shouts filled the entire square.

The young Ye Ru Xi stared at the monster in shock, apparently forgetting to run away.

“How is that possible, they dared to eat humans in front of me?” she muttered in a low voice.

Gu Qing Shan turned his gaze to her.

Only to see that she was hesitant and unsure, her fists clenched tightly.

So she already knew about her powers.

Then, what actually happened?

After a short pause, the presence emanating from Ye Ru Xi vanished.

“No—— I can’t, I can’t do it——”

She sighed and let go of her clenched fist, turning around to flee.

Boom!!!

After she had taken just a few steps, another resounding sound of impact could be heard.

「 Your age of Apocalypse beings at this very moment, humans 」

From a second asteroid crater, a yellow glowing grizzly bear of towering stature crawled out.

It immediately leapt forward to catch a few humans.

——those girls from before.

「 What feeble entities, there is only one meaning to your existence 」 the grizzly bear declared.

The girls panicked and uttered a resounding shriek of fear.

Ye Ru Xi immediately stopped trying to flee.

Those girls were her friends!

She gritted her teeth, hurriedly ran forward, and shouted: "Let them go, I'll be your opponent!"

The grizzly bear didn't even bother to look at her.

The bear paw the size of a truck simply closed up.

The desperate cries from before immediately ceased.

Blood dripped from the clenched paw.

Gu Qing Shan couldn't do anything but sigh.

This was Ye Ru Xi's memories, her past, and Gu Qing Shan is helpless to save those girls.

He could only watch in silence.

At this point, the grizzly bear's voice continued:

「 Food doesn't get to have a say in how or where they get consumed 」

It then turned to Ye Ru Xi and grinned with its terrifying maw.

Ye Ru Xi froze up.

They were living, breathing individuals.

Her close friends who had been with her since childhood simply died in front of her eyes.

She started to shiver and collapsed to her knees, tears beginning to flow.

"I told you to let them go, you apocalyptic monster!" Ye Ru Xi muttered.

The grizzly bear moved towards her step by step.

「 Since you were so close to one another, I'll send you to them 」 it said while walking forward, and Ye Ru Xi sat there motionlessly, silently sobbing.

The grizzly bear reached its other hand out to grab Ye Ru Xi.

Ye Ru Xi hurriedly shook her head and looked up at the sky.

"Come"

She declared.

Before her words had finished, the entire world became silent.

The falling asteroids were frozen in the air.

The fleeing group became still.

Even the crocodile who was in a feeding frenzy stopped in the middle of its chewing motion.

The grizzly bear's paw had stopped in front of Ye Ru Xi's forward, unable to forward a single inch forward.

One second.

Two seconds.

Three seconds.

A booming voice resounded from above the sky:

「 The age of Apocalypse has yet to end, it is not time for me to awaken, who is calling for me? 」

Ye Ru Xi replied: "I am"

Whatever was above the sky paused for a moment.

「 So it was...」 the voice seemed hesitant.

"Help me kill these monsters. But, can you please not hurt anyone else? I beg you" Ye Ru Xi begged.

The voice didn't respond to her.

However, immediately following that, a finger made entirely of bronze descended from above the clouds.

This finger was so long that it connected heaven and earth, squarely landing in front of Ye Ru Xi.

The bronze finger lightly touched the earth, then pulled back above the sky.

That entity had left.

A second later.

The entire city.

Everything.

Vanished in a puff of smoke.

Chapter 1197

Ruined.

A ruined city.

Millions of living beings, massacred.

The only one who remained alive in the vast ruin was a single bewildered young girl.

The descending asteroids were hurriedly avoiding this dead city as if running for their lives.

"No..."

"I said, don't hurt anyone else, why did..."

The girl's expression was completely pale, the emotions in her eyes gradually dried up.

The world turned back into countless fine curves and quickly disappeared from Gu Qing Shan's vision.

Emptiness.

Another world suddenly appeared and received Gu Qing Shan into it.

A tree by the river.

Under its shade.

Gu Qing Shan had returned.

Zhang Ying Hao and Ye Fei Li were standing next to him, Ye Fei Li stood facing his gaze straight with her own.

Ye Ru Xi asked with anticipation and nervousness: "You said... that you were the same kind as me?"

"Indeed, can you control your power now?" Gu Qing Shan asked.

A question straight to the heart.

If they aren't the same kind, how would they ask such a question?

Ye Ru Xi's eyes lit up.

She hesitantly stated: "Please prove to me that you are my same kind"

Gu Qing Shan signaled to Zhang Ying Hao through his eyes.

"Use your strongest summoning technique, otherwise she would not believe us" he sent his voice.

Zhang Ying Hao tacitly understood and drew a Card from the void of space.

"Don't worry, I'll summon the ruler of the Hitman deck"

Zhang Ying Hao sent his voice in return and tossed the Card outward.

Boom!

A resounding impact.

A green-scaled lizard that was several hundred meters tall appeared in front of the trio.

Compared to the last time Gu Qing Shan saw him, he seemed to have changed somehow—

It had become stronger.

「 Ah, little Ying Hao, did you summon me? 」

The green-scaled lizard breathed out a cluster of colorful mist and questioned.

"A friend wanted to see you" Zhang Ying Hao replied.

He, together with Gu Qing Shan and Ye Fei Li, turned to Ye Ru Xi.

Ye Ru Xi looked a bit confused and muttered: “Why so weak?”

She turned directly to Zhang Ying Hao and questioned: “This weak and feeble reptile, is the entity that you can summon?”

The world became silent.

Before the three of them said anything, the green-scaled lizard’s presence abruptly rose.

He seemed to have been angered——

“Dispel!”

Zhang Ying Hao hurriedly canceled the summon.

With a poof, the green-scaled lizard was forcefully sent back.

How dangerous!

If he had gotten angry, that wouldn’t be a joke anymore.

Zhang Ying Hao wiped the sweat off his forehead and was about to say something when Gu Qing Shan took the opportunity first.

“As you can see” Gu Qing Shan calmly stated, “Our control of power had reached this extreme level of accuracy—— that was the weakest one we can summon”

“Right, indeed, that was the weakest entity that I could summon” Zhang Ying Hao immediately followed up and continued: “We wouldn’t arbitrarily exert extreme power, as you saw before, my summoning had been restrained to the utmost degree, normal people couldn’t possibly achieve that”

——of course, other people would never be able to achieve that.

The Hitman deck was a branch of a Mysticism Card deck, one that only hitmen could form a covenant with.

Even in the 900 million World Layers, this Card deck was a considerably rare one, combined with how scarcely talented hitmen were, the Card deck was even harder to come across.

Zhang Ying Hao could be considered to be an individual of extraordinary strength in the current 900 million World Layers.

However, compared to Ye Ru Xi...

“So that was how it was. I spent 10 years learning how to control my powers, so it is highly unusual for me to lose control of my power nowadays—— but even so, I still couldn’t finely control the power I summon to become as weak as you displayed”

Ye Ru Xi casually stated.

Crack.

Zhang Ying Hao could hear his own heart, breaking.

“Indeed, it wasn’t easy to reach my current level. To be exact, it took me 20 years” he calmly replied.

It took me 20 years to reach this level of strength.

Zhang Ying Hao silently told himself.

“So weak, so feeble, so unassuming that others would ever pay attention to you, how I admire the level you have reached” Ye Ru Xi displayed a look of determination: “I believe that with the passage of time, I would eventually reach your same level and grasp a full control of my abilities”

Zhang Ying Hao displayed an encouraging smile and replied with the tone of an experienced senior: “You have a long way to go, do your best”

“Hm, I will definitely follow your example” Ye Ru Xi nodded.

Her gaze towards Zhang Ying Hao now carried a genuine sense of admiration.

Please support our website and read on novelbold

Gu Qing Shan: “...”

Ye Fei Li: “...”

The two of them exchanged glances.

— for somebody to be emotionally battered to this degree and could still retain an act full of seniority without changing his expression.

As expected of a professional—

Hitman.

Gu Qing Shan pondered for a bit, then directly told her: “In truth, our strength had also been suppressed by a considerable degree as we entered this world. If you’ve seen me fight, you should have been able to sense part of that”

Silently listening to him Ye Ru Xi finally appeared relaxed.

It wasn’t just the summoned lizard, but Gu Qing Shan’s statement that fully convinced her.

He managed to stop the giant ape’s attack with a single strike.

How could she not notice that he couldn’t completely exert his swordsmanship at the time?

At the moment he wielded his sword, I could instantly sense a terrific chill.

As if the life and death of all living beings lay on the blade of his sword, waiting to be decided by his single thought.

— and also.

He could transform into an apocalyptic monster and survive the explosion of 6 nuclear bombs without being discovered by anyone.

Who could possibly do such a thing in this world?

This had already surpassed my entire 27 years of living experience.

Ye Ru Xi silently nodded and trusted them a bit more.

“Good, then let us get into official business” Gu Qing Shan sternly said, “Right now, we need to think of a way to leave this world. Otherwise, if the carriers of [Order] or apocalyptic monster discover you again, the same situation from before will repeat itself”

Ye Ru Xi was stunned.

The same situation from before...

No matter how much I tried to blend into society, to display my worth, to work for the sake of this world.

They were willing to sacrifice over a million lives just to kill me!

Ye Ru Xi took a deep breath.

She turned to the three men in front of her.

It's no longer the same.

Right now, I have people of my same kind.

“How should we leave now?” Ye Ru Xi lightly asked.

Gu Qing Shan felt assured and answered: “I’m not sure either. I don’t know a lot about your world, we will need a lot more information, perhaps a bit of resource and technology as well...”

“Resources and technology?” Ye Ru Xi asked doubtfully.

Zhang Ying Hao chimed in: “Indeed, even without his supernatural abilities, he would still be a scientist—— one that commands science far surpassing this world, which can help us safely depart”

Ye Ru Xi delightfully asked: “A scientist? I would never have thought, then what about you?”

“Me? I’m a hitman, an assassin, I own a hitman guild” Zhang Ying Hao replied.

“You truly are impressive” Ye Ru Xi exclaimed.

She then turned to Ye Fei Li.

Ye Fei Li shrugged and answered: “I’m the number one ranking gamer in the world”

“Number one ranking gamer?”

“That’s right, what do you usually play? RPG? Real-Time Strategy? Or casual games?” Ye Fei Li excitedly asked.

“I don’t play games”

Both of them went silent.

This conversation was stopped here.

“Alright” Gu Qing Shan cut in, “While no one had discovered us, let’s search this city to see if we can find anything useful. At the same time, I want to learn a bit more about this world’s history, trends of social upheaval, the direction of scientific development, space travel research results, as well as the current distribution and usage of resources”

The four of them turned to the ruins of the city.

“What are you planning?” Zhang Ying Hao asked.

“Space is vast, and it doesn’t have such a thing as nuclear weapons, it would become our home field” Gu Qing Shan replied.

Zhang Ying Hao and Ye Fei Li both nodded.

When it came to technology, Gu Qing Shan’s expertise was second to none.

Everything that Ye Ru Xi had come into contact with today were things that she had never seen before, so she was in a good mood as she answered: “Although all traces of living beings have been erased from this city, I know of a few research centers that should still have usable technology”

“Let’s seize our time, some unknown variables might be introduced very soon, we need to set out now” Gu Qing Shan stated.

“Hm, let’s go” Ye Ru Xi replied.

...

In the same world.

At another location.

A distant oceanic city.

Under the cover of night, two figures suddenly appeared.

The Raging Flame Traveler’s burning chains illuminated their surroundings.

The Soul Shrieker stood still for a while in the darkness and examined the [Chaos]’s prompt.

『 It seems we will need to find another Deity of [Chaos] in this world 』 the Soul Shrieker’s female voice said.

「 Our enemy arrived an hour before us—— they spent a lot less time compared to us in the bar 」 the Raging Flame Traveler commented.

「 『 We should probably hurry up, perhaps, we might be able to eliminate them all right here 」 』

The Soul Shrieker exuded a solid sense of killing intent as it said that.

The Raging Flame Traveler paused for a brief moment, then replied: 「 That is a good choice, although our strength had been suppressed, all of our supernatural abilities have been fully unsealed 」

『 『 Indeed. With your great power from the Age of Immemorial and my divine power, it should be quite easy to get rid of a few mortals whose powers are also being suppressed 』 』 the Soul Shrieker grinned.

『 『 Let us end the Apotheotic Combat right in this place 』 』

Chapter 1198

This was a heavily destroyed building.

The Space Science Research Center.

In truth, most employees of this place had been appropriately evacuated before the monsters completely ransacked the city.

Only the large-scale equipment was left behind due to how heavy and difficult they were to transport.

Everyone was already used to it.

Apocalyptic monsters were only interested in living people while completely ignoring artificial structures.

Because of this, after the employees inside had been evacuated, this facility only suffered a bit of external damage, once the monsters realized that there was no one inside, they immediately moved to find the next target.

In the underground basement of the research center.

Gu Qing Shan was controlling a few primitive mechanical arms to create advanced mechanical products.

Ye Ru Xi silently watched, then asked: “Has he always been such a workaholic?”

It had already been 10 hours.

Ever since entering this place, Gu Qing Shan had gotten busy with his work without caring about anything else.

Zhang Ying Hao explained: “Because of how primitive your technology currently is, he still has a lot of work to do. I think it wouldn’t be until all the foundational technology had been finished that he would have a bit more time to rest”

Ye Fei Li rubbed his stomach and said: “I’m hungry”

Zhang Ying Hao replied: “Don’t you have instant noodles?”

Ye Fei Li said: “It’s not a good idea to eat nothing but that— let’s go bring back some ingredients, what do you say?”

“Hm... sure” Zhang Ying Hao agreed.

The two of them turned to Ye Ru Xi.

“I’ll wait here. By the way, I don’t know how to cook” Ye Ru Xi.

“Don't worry, we weren't counting on it” the two of them answered in unison.

“That's good to hear” Ye Ru Xi sighed in relief.

Zhang Ying Hao and Ye Fei Li left.

Half an hour later.

The two of them brought a large amount of cooking ingredients back from outside.

They then placed it all on the large meeting table.

“I'm hungry” Zhang Ying Hao said.

“Me too, but you can't count on a Man Killer Fiend to learn how to cook” Ye Fei Li replied.

“Nor can you count on a hitman” Zhang Ying Hao added.

After stating that, the two of them snuck a glance at Gu Qing Shan.

—quite obviously, this was purposely said for him to hear.

Gu Qing Shan didn't turn around and just said something to the air.

From the void of space behind him, an autumn-clear blue steel sword manifested, hovered in front of the meeting table, and transformed into a cold beauty dressed in palace maid clothing.

Looking at her, Ye Ru Xi muttered: “How beautiful...”

The maid tied her hair up, then rolled up her sleeves and told the three: “Gongzi is currently at a pivotal stage of production, so he can't divide his attention. I'll be responsible for this meal”

“What exactly is he doing?”

“He's creating a mechanical arm”

“Using mechanical arms to create another mechanical arm?”

“To be exact, he's using obsolete mechanical arms to create an advanced mechanical arm”

“Then... do you know how to cook?” Ye Fei Li couldn't help but ask.

Shannu casually answered: “I know how to make everything that gongzi knows, our skills are also of the same caliber. Whatever you want to eat, just tell me”

...

20 minutes later.

After Shannu finished cooking, she turned back into a sword and faded back into the void behind Gu Qing Shan's back.

Gu Qing Shan was finally done.

“That was tough”

He sighed and walked up to the meeting table.

Zhang Ying Hao popped open a bottle of strong liquor, then a bottle of champagne.

He poured the strong liquor for Gu Qing Shan and himself, while the champagne was for Ye Fei Li and Ye Ru Xi.

Ye Ru Xi only took a sip before saying: "Give me the same thing you're drinking"

Zhang Ying Hao shrugged and poured her a shot of strong liquor.

Zhang Ying Hao, Gu Qing Shan, and Ye Ru Xi downed a shot together.

Ye Fei Li looked down at his glass of champagne, muttering: "I feel like I've just been excluded from some sort of circle"

Gu Qing Shan looked at the food on the table.

Shannu had prepared for them a fruit salad, some meat soup, bread, beef fat gravy fruit, a whole roasted pig, braised rabbit, smoked sausage, fried quail, and beef curry.

"Ah... so she's been interested in another culinary culture lately, let me prepare everyone one more dish"

Saying so, Gu Qing Shan searched the pile of ingredients for carrots, onions, shallots, cooking wine, coriander, unroasted pepper... etc.

With his level of skill and spirit energy as his support, he finished cooking a steaming hotpot in a few dozen breaths' worth of time.

The hotpot was placed at the middle of the table on a burner, wafting its fragrance in every direction.

Please support our website and read on [novelbold](#)

Surrounding it were all sorts of other dishes.

Gu Qing Shan cut up a few fruits before arranging the table.

Using goose liver, he smoked it with a relatively primitive method, then plated on the table:

"This is my personal preference, if General Ye doesn't find it palatable, you don't need to force yourself"
Gu Qing Shan said.

He then made a vinegar boiled fish and put it in front of Ye Fei Li

"Thanks, this is exactly my taste"

An alluring full course of food was laid out to fill the entire table.

Ye Ru Xi simply watched as Gu Qing Shan cooked, then carefully scooped up a piece of pork from the hotpot and ate.

It was delicious.

This wasn't the taste of the Apocalypse.

Ye Ru Xi was stunned for a long while before muttering to herself: "Now I'm fully convinced; you guys are definitely not people of this world"

The four of them dig in.

After the meal, they also went through a few bottles of alcohol.

"General Ye, you can certainly hold your liquor" Zhang Ying Hao praised.

"Indeed, I'm quite impressed" Gu Qing Shan also praised her.

"This era is too torturous, so how could one not drink?" Ye Ru Xi asked in return.

Everyone went silent.

Gu Qing Shan raised his glass and offered it to her: "That statement deserves a shot"

"Give"

Ye Ru Xi drank it all, then pushed the glass back to Gu Qing Shan, gesturing him to pour some more.

"That should be enough for today" Gu Qing Shan said.

"No, pour me some more, I want to borrow this shot to tell you something clearly" Ye Ru Xi replied.

Seeing her say that, Gu Qing Shan poured her one full shot and handed it to her.

Ye Ru Xi received the shot glass from him, then stated: "I... have carefully considered, and I won't be able to leave with you just yet"

"Why not?" Gu Qing Shan calmly asked.

"Because there are still a lot of people in this world that I simply can't give up. I actually have a lot of friends, and if I leave, those girls would be stuck in a world like this. I can't give up on them, and I can't bear to watch as they face the Apocalypse, I can't simply ignore them" Ye Ru Xi replied.

"If not for this, you'd actually be willing to follow us, to see worlds that are greater, to experience more colorful people and things, right?" Gu Qing Shan asked.

Ye Ru Xi slowly nodded, her gaze filled with yearning.

Gu Qing Shan silently smiled.

He was quite pleased.

"What do you think?" he asked.

Zhang Ying Hao replied: "Decent"

Ye Fei Li also agreed: "Hm, quite decent"

Gu Qing Shan turned to the confused Ye Ru Xi and cleared his throat: "Hear me out. If you were able to easily discard everything and come with us, then I will have considered this to be a job finished just like any other"

“But when I first met you, you were in the middle of evacuating the civilians, you then became furious with me due to the crater I made. Even when you were betrayed by those people, you just silently left. Even as you were bombarded with nuclear bombs, I could only recognize sorrow from you, not the will to seek revenge”

Gu Qing Shan tilted his body forward slightly and whispered: “General Ye, within this Apocalypse, those who turn into devils are nothing but uncommon, but very few can still remain human while being plunged in darkness. And personally, you are one of them”

“Because of this, I now officially invite you to be our collaborator”

“Collaborator?” Ye Ru Xi repeated.

“Indeed, collaborator. We provide a lot of benefits, knowledge, and even privileges. I can guarantee that you would not regret joining us” Gu Qing Shan replied.

“But like I just said, I want to protect this world——” Ye Ru Xi insisted.

Gu Qing Shan cut her off: “I’ll save this world for you, when everything is over, are you willing to join and come with us?”

Ye Ru Xi looked at him hesitantly: “But the Apocalypse has been here for many years, even now we...”

“It’s nothing but a low-class Apocalypse” Gu Qing Shan calmly replied.

Ye Ru Xi stayed silent for a bit, then nodded.

Gu Qing Shan raised his glass.

Ye Ru Xi brought her glass closer.

They knocked against one another.

The two of them finished it in one gulp.

“Have you decided?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

“I have” Ye Ru Xi replied.

Gu Qing Shan tilted his head and looked towards the void of space.

“[Chaos], have you been watching? It wasn’t that I want to save this world, but because your Deity insisted that I have to do so, otherwise she wouldn’t leave” he said in his mind.

From the void, a line of grey text reluctantly appeared:

[Special request: Challenger of Apotheotic Combat, Gu Qing Shan, please save this world, and return with Ye Ru Xi]

Reading this message, Gu Qing Shan slowly smiled.

“I recall... there was a notification earlier reminding me not to save this world—— who was that from?” he mocked.

The grey text disappeared from the void of space.

No response.

Chapter 1199

The dock.

The Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler were both standing in the darkness.

「 How is it, can you sense it? 」 the Raging Flame Traveler asked.

The Soul Shrieker opened its eyes and replied: 「 『 I can feel the power of [Chaos] on the other side of the ocean, most likely an unawakened Deity of [Chaos], but my senses were a bit blurry. I will need to approach closer before I can pinpoint their location 」 』

The Raging Flame Traveler pondered: 「 Our oppositions arrived much earlier than we did, so once we find that Deity, they would most likely not be too far 」

The Soul Shrieker clenched its fist excitedly and declared: 『 「 That would be our best chance to kill them, then take the Deity away, killing two birds with one stone 』 」

「 Then, let us first cross the ocean! 」 the Raging Flame Traveler said.

「 『 Indeed, I've calculated the distance, we will only need to journey for half a way 」 』

The two monsters turned to the boundless ocean in front of them.

Oom!

An aquatic fish the size of a cruise liner leapt out from the water, completely obscuring the stars and moon.

It was struggling, trying to escape.

But a bloody maw that was larger than the fish itself emerged from below, caught the fish, and pulled it back into the sea.

The impact caused an intense wave mixed with blood to surge.

The short struggle between the two aquatic creatures had caused a 3-meter-tall tidal wave that crashed towards the shore.

Shuu— oom!

The Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler were completely soaked.

They silently stood on the beach, temporarily motionless.

「 『 Detestable, I didn't think the ocean would also be changed 」 』

「 Hm 」

『 「 Our strength had been sealed, if we tried to directly cross, there's a chance...』 」

「 Hm...」

...

Two days later.

On the other side of the ocean.

“This is their best chance to kill us, but also our best chance to kill them” Gu Qing Shan stated.

He was currently underground, carefully dealing with some broken power lines.

Ye Fei Li pushed a large collapsed rock aside and asked: “When will they arrive?”

“Hard to say for sure, we’ll have to see who finds the other party first”

“Is there a difference?”

“If they find us first, they’ll have the initiative and can ambush us anytime they wish; if we find them first, we’ll be able to meticulously design an ambush that will make sure they won’t live to see another day”

Gu Qing Shan carefully attached two wires to one another and casually replied.

Ye Fei Li pondered and muttered to himself: “As a Man Killer Fiend, I still haven’t killed a Deity yet... I truly wonder how much power I would gain from killing a Deity”

At this point, Zhang Ying Hao’s voice resounded from their communicator”

[The powerline on my side is done]

“Got it”

Gu Qing Shan opened the metal casing of the powerline, stuffed the wires back in, then closed it up.

The two of them soon returned to the main facility.

“When I pull this trigger, both the powerline and network will be restarted, humanity’s system will be able to discover this place immediately; are you sure about this?” Ye Ru Xi asked.

“Hm” Gu Qing Shan replied.

Ye Ru Xi pulled the main power switch of the research center.

One after another, lights began to turn back on.

Lines of code appeared on the large monitor one by one.

Gu Qing Shan stood in front of the computer, quickly operating it with both hands.

Following his movement, packets were sent out into humanity’s information network after being encrypted, then returned.

The sound of typing grew louder and louder, as well as more rhythmic.

After a while, Gu Qing Shan stopped.

“Alright, they can now no longer discover us. The next task is to take control of every satellite” he muttered.

“But that’s very tiring work, especially for humans at this level, then——”

The sound of typing resounded again.

Zhang Ying Hao looked over from the side, then asked: “Artificial intelligence?”

“Right, just a few simple lines of AI algorithm, but it’ll save me a lot of work” Gu Qing Shan replied.

Zhang Ying Hao thought for a bit, then asked: “I’ve always wondered, when Impartial Goddess awakened back then, what exactly did you do?”

Gu Qing Shan smiled and replied: “I simply gave her a small push on her path of advancement. In reality, she’s the one who’s really incredible”

Gu Qing Shan quickly operated the computer and soon took over the full command of the satellite cluster. He then had them scan over the vicinity of this city once.

“Once every ten minutes, scan for any anomalies that show up on the map, effective immediately” Gu Qing Shan ordered.

Ding!

A noise came from the large computer, signaling the acceptance of this order.

“That’s the first security issue dealt with, now, we’re going to take a look and see if the human alliance is hiding something considerable apart from nuclear weapons”

Gu Qing Shan clicked on a symbol and continuously punched in lines of code one after another.

Surveillance footage appeared on the screen following each line.

Weapon reserves, research centers, airports, military bases, anti-air radar clusters, and even the upper-brass meeting rooms were being displayed one by one.

Gu Qing Shan pressed a button.

One footage was zoomed in.

The upper-brass of the human alliance were conducting a meeting.

Please support our website and read on novelbold

[With 6 nuclear bombs, no one would be able to escape such an explosion, I believe that we should focus our efforts on...] one of them was presenting his point.

Gu Qing Shan pressed another button.

The footage continued to be extracted.

It wasn’t until a few moments later that Gu Qing Shan abruptly pressed another button.

Another footage was zoomed in again.

Inside a 30-meter deep metallic facility, a large number of people were conducting research on the prototype of a certain machine.

“This is the Mech armour of your world?” Zhang Ying Hao asked Ye Ru Xi with interest.

Ye Ru Xi observed the machine onscreen, then turned to Gu Qing Shan and replied: “My ranking wasn’t sufficient, I’ve never heard about this before”

Gu Qing Shan observed the large machine and commented: “There aren’t any issues with the mechanical structure, but it’s still too primitive, and they shouldn’t have begun with something so big right away”

He thought for a while, then resumed typing.

“It’s still not yet time for Mechs, we need to make something else first for now”

A mechanical arm appeared on his screen.

It was the one he created yesterday.

[All materials have been prepared]

[Manufacturing blueprint received]

[Begin construction]

The arm began to move.

It was extremely fast, quickly finishing a certain object from numerous electronic parts and material.

“What kind of toy are you making?” Ye Fei Li asked.

“A foundational-type warp apparatus” Gu Qing Shan replied.

Very quickly, a warp apparatus was finished.

“I’ve made quite a few, some attached to satellites, some sent on airplanes or other modes of transport to every corner of this continent” Gu Qing Shan explained.

“What’s a warp apparatus?” Ye Ru Xi asked.

“A technological teleportation device” Ye Fei Li replied.

Ding!

The computer issued a warning before displaying some footage on-screen.

The footage was of the Raging Flame Traveler and Soul Shrieker outside of a certain city.

Next to them was a large container truck, the truck driver had already been killed, his body casually thrown to the side.

From how worn-out the two monsters were, they had clearly been through a lot.

“It’s time for battle” Zhang Ying Hao took out his assault rifle and loaded its bullets.

“There’s no time to make any plans, from how they seem, I think they’ll find this place very soon” Ye Fei Li’s crimson glow manifested.

“They’re too early, I still haven’t finished dealing with the apocalyptic monsters, it would be better if they returned later on” Gu Qing Shan scowled.

He quickly began to operate the computer, sending various orders out.

Almost right away, the orbital satellite just above that city opened its hatch and prepared to send in its package.

As the mechanical package began its descent, the Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler both reacted immediately.

「 A human artifact? 」 the Raging Flame Traveler looked up and observed the thing in the sky.

『 「 I don’t know. Regardless, this is a greatly obsolete technological world, none of their means could ever possibly harm us 』 」 the Soul Shrieker looked up and replied.

While the package slowly descended, it was constantly broadcasting a message in an electronic voice: [Welcome to the ruined city, I am the technological manager of the Chaos faction, how may I serve you?]

Its constant broadcast of this message had also successfully deterred the two monsters from attacking it immediately.

The mechanical package successfully parachuted in front of the two [Chaos] monsters.

The package then slowly opened up while the electronic voice started saying something else:

[How may I help you? Whether it is murder or destruction, I can accomplish them both, please inform me]

The Raging Flame Traveler observed this mechanical item and commented: 「 This thing looks a lot like the product of those mad scientists from the Era of [Chaos] 」

「 We want to find someone; can you do that? 」

[Affirmative, search complete, location confirmed, commencing activation] the electronic voice replied.

The Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler exchanged glances.

If this was a trap, they didn’t have anything to fear, because technological artifacts cannot hurt them.

The Soul Shrieker spoke: 『 「 Wait a minute, I still haven’t told you what we—— 』 」

Right away, the warp apparatus was activated.

Space was distorted and collapsed, sucking the Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler inside.

...

The dock.

The Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler were both standing on a sandy beach.

The two monsters turned to the boundless ocean in front of them.

Oom!

An aquatic fish the size of a cruise liner leapt out from the water, completely obscuring the stars and moon.

It was struggling, trying to escape.

But a bloody maw that was larger than the fish itself emerged from below, caught the fish, and pulled it back into the sea.

The impact caused an intense wave mixed with blood to surge.

The short struggle between the two aquatic creatures had caused a 3-meter-tall tidal wave that crashed towards the shore.

Shuu— — oom!

The Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler were completely soaked.

They silently stood on the beach, temporarily motionless.

「 What the hell, why did we return here!? 」

Chapter 1200

“The first official experiment will commence”

“Fei Li, get ready”

“3”

“2”

“1”

Zi—zi—

The void of space suddenly expanded.

A flaming four-hooved black beast suddenly appeared in front of them.

Before it could even react, a bloody red flash of light had softly enveloped it.

The bloody red light pulled back.

The black monster collapsed as pieces of flesh.

“Seems like we’ve succeeded, now commencing reverse warp!” Gu Qing Shan spoke.

He tapped a button on the mechanical keyboard.

The warp apparatus activated again.

Zi——

The void of space heavily collapsed.

All the dismembered pieces and blood were sent back.

Gu Qing Shan continued to operate the keyboard extracting some footage.

In another city.

A group of monsters stood around the mass of flesh and blood, completely stunned.

They only saw one of their friends suddenly vanishing, then returning as a pile of flesh.

——the monsters couldn’t comprehend what had just happened at all.

In every city, all sorts of warp apparatus had been hidden inside debris, buried underground, propped on top of trees, even bricks, broken cars, abandoned trash cans, street lamps, and many others were taken advantage of to disguise these warp apparatus.

“The reason why I called this a low-level Apocalypse was not only because of these monsters’ strength but also because of their arrogance” Gu Qing Shan explained.

“Arrogance?” Ye Ru Xi doubtfully asked.

“Indeed, arrogance is the synonym of stupidity, as they completely assumed humanity to be their food, neglecting to try and understand human civilization” Gu Qing Shan answered.

He pressed another button.

On the screen, another hidden warp apparatus was activated.

Instant, two monsters were sucked into the void and disappeared.

Ye Fei Li and Zhang Ying Hao had both been waiting for this moment.

Zhang Ying Hao raised his gun.

Ye Fei Li brandished the Forgetting River Soul Flaying Hook.

The very moment those monsters appeared, they were eliminated.

Gu Qing Shan tapped his keyboard.

The killed monsters were warped back.

The surrounding monsters jumped from fright.

「 Some terrible fellow is here! They're trying to eliminate us! 」 a pig monster howled.

With its declaration, the other monsters hurriedly scattered.

All of a sudden, a large hand grabbed the pig monster's head and crushed it.

「 Who dared spout such nonsense!? Die! 」

The roar stopped all the monsters.

A few particularly powerful monsters had noticed the commotion and arrived here.

Great Demonic Ape King, Razor-claw Tiger King, Black-winged Hawk King.

「 What exactly happened that caused you to be so frightful! 」 the Great Demonic Ape King roared.

A monster cautiously stepped forward and explained what happened.

Hearing the explanation, the Razor-claw Tiger King coldly scoffed: 「 Fools, you still don't get it? It must be a human with a concealment-type ability hiding amongst the shadows, waiting to ambush you 」

The Great Demonic Ape King pondered a bit, then spoke: 「 We've fought with the humans of this world for many years, we've killed over half of them and devoured everyone we killed, but we've never seen something like this. It seems like someone really did awaken a supernatural ability that we do not know about 」

It scoffed: 「 However, they're only one person. Even if they obtained some sort of supernatural ability, how could they deal with all of us? 」

It suddenly acted and grabbed a nearby branch.

「 Here, hiding right on this tree! 」

The Great Demonic Ape King roared.

—-there were still some minor fluctuations when these miniature warp apparatus activated, so it was discovered right away.

Shuuu—-—-

As soon as the Great Demonic Ape King grabbed the tree branch, the warp apparatus activated and whisked it away.

...

On the other side.

Gu Qing Shan, Zhang Ying Hao, Ye Fei Li, and Ye Ru Xi had been waiting.

As soon as the Great Demonic Ape King appeared, the four of them attacked it at once.

One sword strike.

One gunshot.

One hook.

One punch.

Against full-powered strikes from the four of them, the Great Demonic Ape King couldn't even recognize its surroundings before it was eradicated.

Gu Qing Shan sheathed his sword and returned to the computer, commenting: "This should be enough to completely scare them"

When he was about to press the button to teleport the monster back, Ye Fei Li stopped him.

"Qing Shan, wait a moment!"

Gu Qing Shan turned to him.

Ye Fei Li walked over with a terrible grin: "If you want to rouse fear, I actually am quite the expert with that"

He seemed unreasonably delighted.

"What do you have in mind?" Gu Qing Shan halted and asked with interest.

Ye Fei Li licked his lips and said: "Earlier when Zhang Ying Hao and I left to look for cooking ingredients, we also found a plushie shop"

"Hm, and then?"

"Wait a moment, I'll be right back"

Ye Fei Li turned into a bright red streak of light, shooting out from the research center.

In just a few moments, he returned.

"Take a look at this"

Ye Fei Li showed the thing in his hand to the other three.

“Can this really make them scared?” Ye Ru Xi was confused.

“Genius!” Zhang Ying Hao clapped his hand.

Please support our website and read on novelbold

Ye Fei Li tossed the thing to Gu Qing Shan.

“Alright, let us see how well this goes”

Gu Qing Shan replied.

He put that thing onto the warp apparatus and fired it up.

...

On the other side.

The Razor-claw Tiger King and Black-winged Hawk King were rallying more monsters to search for the Great Demonic Ape King.

A few other powerful Elemental monsters also arrived.

「 Disappeared? Right in front of you? 」 a 30-meter tall monster asked.

「 Yes 」 the Razor-claw Tiger King replied.

All of a sudden, the monsters looked down at the ground.

Only to see a small monkey plushie.

The monsters froze.

Could it be...

They all had the same uneasy thought.

The Black-winged Hawk King carefully poked the plushie with its beak and asked: 「 Great Demonic Ape King, are you ok? 」

The monkey plushie remained still with a smile on its face, motionless and unresponsive.

「 How did it shrink so much? Is it dead? Or was it attacked by some sort of unique magic? 」 a black bear questioned.

「 No, I don't think that's the Ape King, this is a fake 」 a baboon refuted.

While the monsters were talking, a brick on the ground slightly shifted.

At the very next moment, that baboon also vanished.

Silence.

The void shifted again.

All of a sudden—

Another monkey plushie appeared on the ground.

The monsters looked at the monkey plushie, unable to say a single word.

The Razor-claw Tiger King stated: 「 Perhaps it's only directed at the monkey race———」

The void shifted.

It disappeared as well.

Poof!

A tiger plushie appeared on the ground.

Silence.

Absolute silence.

「 That was eerie... but fortunately, we aren't completely helpless 」 the black bear muttered.

It picked up the three plushies and placed them on its palm.

「 I just happens to know a dispelling technique—— seems like only I would be able to help them return to normal 」

The black bear stroked the three plushies a few times and muttered something.

「 Dispel! 」 the black bear shouted.

A black ray of magical light landed on the three plushies.

They didn't react at all, nothing happened to them.

——the black bear could indeed perform some powerful dispelling techniques.

But these three items were nothing but plushies.

The black bear was a bit panicked, so it poked the monkey plushie again and shouted: 「 Dispel! 」

No reaction.

At the same time, because of how hasty it was, its claw ripped a hole in the monkey plushie as well.

The black bear quickly pulled back.

——but how could a regular plushie withstand its power?

As it jerked its paw backward, the monkey plushie was ripped in half.

The black bear froze.

All the monsters froze.

The 30-meter-tall monster suddenly shouted: 「 You killed it! You killed the Great Demonic Ape King! 」

「 No! 」 the black bear hurriedly refuted, 「 I didn't kill it! 」

It crouched close to the ground and used every healing technique it could remember.

「 Great Demonic Ape King! Hurry and wake up! 」

The black bear was soaked in a cold sweat as it practically begged.

The plushie remained still.

It was only ripped, of course, it couldn't move.

The 30-meter-tall monster insisted: 「 Everyone saw it clearly! It was your claw that ripped and killed the Great Demonic Ape King! 」

As it spoke, the familiar fluctuations from before occurred again.

Poof!

The black bear vanished too.

One breath.

Two breaths.

Three breaths.

Poof!

A black bear plushie now sat on the ground together with the tiger plushie and monkey plushie.

The entire place became silent again.

The 30-meter-tall monster shouted: 「 Motherfucker, that's too scary... I'm leaving! 」

It hurriedly ran away.

The monster watched the three plushies on the ground.

These were three of their kings.

What the fuck?

Why am I still here?

「 RUN—— AWAY——! 」

One of the monsters finally shouted.

Immediately, all of them scattered without question!

They were hurriedly running away from this location with every fiber of their being.

Chapter 1201

A female doll sat on top of a chair.

She was staring straight at the screen with an unchanging smile.

Around her, a heavily distorted voice resounded:

[Humans, greetings]

[Seeing how you could not even deal with an Apocalypse of this level; I am filled with pity]

[I will tell you a secret: YOU are the true Apocalypse of those monsters, as they will be massacred to extinction right in front of you]

[Following this, you shall observe the foolproof process of retaliation]

[Hopefully, you will be able to grasp it soon, because——-]

[In 5 minutes, humanity's retaliation against the Apocalypse will begin]

...

The human alliance's HQ.

The governmental office of every country on the continent, as well as various army corps.

Every serviceable screen switched on by itself, displaying the previous footage.

Followed by footage of a man whose face had been heavily censored.

[Can you see this, inside this killing chamber, monsters will constantly appear one after another]

[All of you must prepare yourselves to immediately kill off any monster as soon as they appear]

[You may leave the clean-up for the machines, as they will automatically clean up the corpse to make space for the next monster to arrive]

[Your personnel must continuously take turns killing the monster without pause, up until I deem it fit for you to stop]

[Now, you have 5 minutes to prepare yourselves]

[After 5 minutes, I will deliver the weakest monster to your location. Once you've gradually grasped the rhythm, I will be sending increasingly more powerful monsters for you to eliminate]

[I will now announce the location of each killing chamber]

[Human alliance's HQ, military General sparring field]

[The Eastern continent's 5th Company base, monster corpse clean-up array]

[The 7th Army's base, training grounds]

[...]

5 minutes later.

At each of the mentioned locations, the most powerful Combatants of humanity were waiting with bated breaths.

The reason why apocalyptic monsters were so terrifying was partially because they weren't afraid of hot weapons, and also because of their numbers that made it impossible to kill off all of them at once.

If only one monster was to appear at a time...

How could they not win?

At the human alliance HQ's military General sparring field, several Generals were silently waiting.

Zi—

The void of space fluctuated.

A Uni-horn Frost Buffalo suddenly appeared.

The Generals acted at the same time.

Before the Buffalo could even understand what had happened, it was instantly killed.

One second later.

Its corpse was sent away.

Five breaths' worth of time later.

Another monster manifested.

It also died unceremoniously.

The same situations were occurring at every human military base.

...

Ye Fei Li put the microphone down.

“Nice explanation” Zhang Ying Hao praised.

“But, are you sure there won’t be any issues like this?” Ye Ru Xi watched the onscreen footage and asked worriedly.

Gu Qing Shan was quickly operating the computer as he replied: “Don’t worry, I’ve already run calculations of the total power level of every military base and made a foolproof algorithm for monster distribution as well as deliverance. In the off-chance of any issues——”

“What would happen?” Ye Ru Xi looked at him.

“Quite simply, the problematic monster will be sent away instantly” Gu Qing Shan inputted one final key.

An electronic voice then spoke up from inside the large computer:

[Warp apparatus creation, distribution, deliverance, as well as war observation and management can be left to me. Master, you can rest]

Ye Ru Xi looked at the computer in surprise.

“It’s only a primary-level AI, when you come with us to the space vortex, you’ll see just how insignificant of an achievement this is in the grand scheme of human civilization” Gu Qing Shan shrugged.

“Space vortex?” Ye Ru Xi repeated after him.

“Right” Zhang Ying Hao chimed in, “In the void, there are 900 million World Layers, each World Layer contains billions of worlds with their own uniqueness and traits”

After saying that, he looked at Ye Ru Xi.

— and successfully saw the same expression as his own back when he first learnt about this.

Gu Qing Shan returned to the meeting table and poured everyone a shot of liquor each.

“Now, it’s time for the monsters’ Apocalypse”

Gu Qing Shan offered a glass to everyone.

The four of them raised their glasses.

After taking her drink, Ye Ru Xi turned to watch the surveillance footage.

Only to see the monsters continuously manifested out of thin air, then swiftly killed by the fully-prepared human Combatants, and cleaned up.

This process was becoming smoother as time went by.

Although they didn’t understand what was going on, the human Combatants were clearly delighted.

— if they could keep this up, by the end, the fate of this world would be changed!

They then began drawing up plans to efficiently take advantage of their rests, arranging personnel to take turns on killing, and making sure that there were no loose ends.

Once they had gotten fully used to this process.

The massacre of apocalyptic monsters began to speed up.

30 minutes later.

The monsters were in a panic.

The world-wide computational system issued a warning:

[Master, all apocalyptic monster had begun to move]

[They are trying to split up as much as possible and converge at their destinations from different directions]

[According to the direction they are heading in, I've confirmed that their destination is the most prosperous human settlement, as well as the human alliance's HQ]

[Through simulations, a conclusion has been drawn that the human settlement and human alliance HQ must immediately evacuate and go into hiding, otherwise, they will be surrounded and eliminated!]

Please support our website and read on novelbold

Hearing that, Ye Ru Xi looked at Gu Qing Shan.

Gu Qing Shan put the shot glass in his hand back down, walked in front of the computer, and operated it with both hands.

"They think they can put me on the back-foot like this?"

He muttered.

Following his orders, batches of completed warp apparatus were being sent down from space satellites.

These warp apparatus were buried all over the ground, or disguised as rocks, trees, structures, worms, bird nests, etc.; another portion of them was being carried by flying unmanned drones, creating an interconnected web of defense between the sky and earth.

It was a line of defense composed purely from warp apparatus, stretching endlessly on the ground for over 10,000 kilometers. It was like an invisible wall that completely surrounded the prosperous human settlement as well as the human alliance HQ.

At this point, the monsters arrived from every direction at once.

They had tried their best to scatter and converge here in order to take down the human alliance HQ all at once.

—after all, as far as they understood, this was the toughest nut to crack in this world, so if anyone was capable of causing this ‘calamity’, it would be none other than the alliance HQ.

“Warp Wall, activate” Gu Qing Shan ordered.

[Understood, master]

Following his order, the 10,000-kilometer wall of countless warp apparatus were all activated.

Gu Qing Shan then said: “Use the database of monsters collected from the last few years to determine their strength, compare them to the fighting power of each army, and distribute them appropriately through our warp network”

[Understood!] the computer replied.

A second later.

From the Southeast direction, the first monster entered the range of the ‘wall’.

It was teleported away.

From the Northwest direction, another monster entered the range of the Warp Wall.

It also instantly vanished and appeared somewhere for human Combatants to kill.

Regardless of where they were heading from, every monster who charged towards the human settlement vanished one after another.

[Master, the monsters' advancement is growing increasingly rapid, we will soon reach the limit for all available killing chambers!]

"The first Warp Wall's operational algorithm had reached a near-perfect degree, do not alter it. We can now release a portion of monsters through the wall and allow them to advance" Gu Qing Shan ordered.

[Understood, they will arrive at the human settlement in one hour] the computer replied.

Gu Qing Shan operated the keyboard again, utilizing resources from various locations to quickly manufacture even more warp apparatus.

"Prepare to send in the next batch of warp apparatus and construct the second Warp Wall"

[Understood!]

Ye Ru Xi couldn't help but cut in: "Even with a second wall, the number of monsters humanity can deal with at once is limited. We would just reach the limit of their load like this"

Gu Qing Shan replied: "Who said I'm going to increase the load for humanity's army?"

Ye Ru Xi tried asking further: "Then the second wall is for—"

Gu Qing Shan grinned mysteriously and replied: “To send them to a certain location”

...

At another location.

In the wilderness.

The Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler were quickly rushing forward.

『 「 Remember, if something strange approaches us again, we will immediately act to destroy it 』 』 the Soul Shrieker said.

「 Naturally, we can't let that strange thing teleport us away again, it wasted so much time 』 the Raging Flame Traveler nodded in agreement.

「 But then... where do you think this teleportation power is coming from? 』 the Raging Flame Traveler couldn't help but question.

「 『 Who else could it be from? 』 』 the Soul Shrieker's expression became full of cruel killing intent as it continued: 『 「 Other than that bastard whose head is full of nothing but schemes, I can't think of anyone else who could do such a thing 』 』

「 I will definitely kill him 』 the Raging Flame Traveler declared full of killing intent, 「 Tsk, I once rampaged through countless worlds from the Age of Immemorial—」

The two monsters suddenly stopped.

They hurriedly avoided the expanding space and dodged the fluctuating warp apparatus.

None of the hidden warp apparatus hit them.

『 「 Don't think the same trick is going to work twice! Show yourself and fight me if you dare! 』 」

The Soul Shrieker angrily roared.

「 Don't mind it, with our power of [Chaos], so long as we readied ourselves, this party trick of his is useless 」

The Raging Flame Traveler continued: 「 He has no more tricks to pull, we can now go and immediately kill him! 」

The Soul Shrieker grinned maliciously and replied: 「 『 That's indeed true, we're going to first kill him, then bring that Dei——— 」 』

At the next moment.

Thud thud thud thud thud!

Countless monsters were transported from the second Warp Wall and instantly filled this vast area.

They were falling, climbing on top of one another, howling, shrieking, crying, moving around, trying to give themselves some space.

The Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler were suddenly surrounded by all of these monsters.

「 We didn't die! What happened? 」

One monster nervously shouted.

「 We should have been attacking the human defenses, but too many of our comrades vanished. And now, we seemed to have been... wait a moment, it looks like we were transported to another world all at once! 」 another monster pondered and replied.

Another world!

Every monster became cautious.

「 Everyone be careful, I can sense a presence that is different from our own! 」 a 30-meter-tall monster loudly declared.

A different presence?

The apocalyptic monster nervously but carefully observed their surroundings.

Soon.

All of their gazes were converging in the same direction.

They could see the Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler that were tightly squeezed in the very middle of all the monsters, unable to move.

Soul Shrieker: 「 『 ... 」 』

Raging Flame Traveler: 「 ... 」

The monsters: 「 ... 」

Chapter 1202

“Speed it up!”

Gu Qing Shan’s hands were moving at a rapid pace around the computer keyboard.

Every warp apparatus had been mobilized, overclocked to teleport apocalyptic monsters away within a short period of time.

“Are you in that much of a hurry?” Ye Ru Xi asked.

“Of course, such a good chance like this—”

Gu Qing Shan finished the final input.

Everyone turned to the screen.

Only to find every monster who had gone past the first wall transported to where the Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler were.

In just a few breaths’ worth of time, the vast field of apocalyptic monsters had been piled up to form a small mountain of them.

—-the Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler could no longer be seen.

They had been buried deep inside the horde of monsters.

A second later.

A furious roar resounded from inside the mountain of monsters:

「 You pieces of garbage; you will die right here and now! 」

Fwoom!

The entire mountain of monsters burst into flames.

The scorching flames burned a large hole through the void, displaying a part of the space vortex within.

There were no screams.

The apocalyptic monsters simply died.

A towering magma giant with endless flowing magma at its feet stood where the mountain of monster originally was.

——the Raging Flame Traveler.

He had manifested this form and killed off the monsters that were transported there all at once.

Ding!

A notification popped up on Gu Qing Shan's computer:

[Attention, all warp apparatus within that area had been damaged, changing to overhead satellite view]

Gu Qing Shan sighed in relief as he saw that.

“This was the reason I was in so much hurry” he explained to Ye Ru Xi, “Because I had to seize the time to get rid of all the monsters, or our formation would become faulty when any warp apparatus became damaged”

He continuously pressed a few buttons to display the footage from various areas.

Where the first Warp Wall was, the remaining monsters had all been transported to the various killing chambers to be eliminated.

While there were no longer any monsters at the second Warp Wall.

— they had all been burnt to a crisp by the Raging Flame Traveler's supernatural ability.

In other words.

The apocalyptic monsters had been completely dealt with.

Perhaps there might still be some unimaginably gigantic monsters in the oceans, but overall, the rampaging monster all over this world had been killed to extinction.

"The Apocalypse... is over..."

Ye Ru Xi looked at the screen in disbelief.

There were no risks, no blood-boiling passionate combat, no necessary sacrifices, or risks of life and death.

The Apocalypse had already been eradicated.

This truly was...

"And also, we've even profited from this" Zhang Ying Hao commented, "We managed to witness the Raging Flame Traveler's supernatural ability, which is a very important piece of information"

Ye Fei Li pondered: "That doesn't look like a typical fire giant, I think some sort of destructive Law was contained in that form, we'll definitely die if we get touched by that— it's going to be tough"

Gu Qing Shan continued: "His strength had also been suppressed. I assume that this form was directly correlated to his level of power, meaning that he can't continuously fight like that, otherwise, he would have directly come for us using that"

Sure enough, once all the monsters had been killed, the Raging Flame Traveler quickly transformed back.

He and the Soul Shrieker checked the direction before setting off towards Gu Qing Shan's direction again.

"With their current speed, they'll need 3 hours to reach this location" Gu Qing Shan stated.

"So we're now going to come up with a way to kill them right here, correct?" Zhang Ying Hao asked.

"Naturally" Gu Qing Shan replied.

"I hope I'll get to kill one of them, that will grant me a lot of evolutionary power" Ye Fei Li licked his lips and said.

"Then we'll have to come up with a perfect plan" Gu Qing Shan commented.

"Let me think..." Zhang Ying Hao fell into thought.

Next to them.

Ye Ru Xi was listening to their discussion while observing the trio.

These three are staring at the screen, carefully thinking about how to deal with these two monsters.

—-eradicating all the apocalyptic monsters and saving the world is already an extraordinary feat.

But they've already begun to ponder how to deal with the next problem.

Such people...

Truly are...

Ye Ru Xi stayed silent for a while, then suddenly made up her mind.

“Gu Qing Shan” she called out.

“Huh?” Gu Qing Shan regained his senses.

Ye Ru Xi’s eyes were glowing like gemstones in the dark, her expression clear and bright unlike ever before.

“According to our agreement, you’ll help me save this world and I’ll join you, becoming one of your collaborators” she stated.

“That’s right” Gu Qing Shan replied.

Ye Ru Xi offered her hand.

Gu Qing Shan smiled and reached his hand out as well.

Please support our website and read on novelbold

They shook.

“Welcome to the team”

Gu Qing Shan said.

Zhang Ying Hao and Ye Fei Li both smiled, unable to help themselves recalling what happened when they first joined Gu Qing Shan.

That night, the two of us went out looking for a space monster corpse.

...

At the second meeting, they invited me to return to my identity as a human.

...now that I think about it, it really has been a while.

“Welcome to the team”

Zhang Ying Hao and Ye Fei Li both sincerely said.

Ye Ru Xi anxiously said: “Thanks, now I can ask—— since we’re collaborators, what organization do we belong to in the 900 million World Layers?”

“The Blade Pledge Edge” Zhang Ying Hao replied.

“That’s not so” Ye Fei Li waved his hand dismissively, “I asked Barry about this, he said that this was only a kind of secret loose promise between them, and the one who proposed it wasn’t him, so if we’re going to be collaborators, we need to use another name”

Gu Qing Shan frowned: “That troublesome? It would be just fine if we can just use their name”

“Can’t be helped, we can’t take the name of someone else, otherwise Barry and Kitty won’t be able to uphold their reputations” Ye Fei Li replied.

“Then we’re going to need to think of another name, huh?”

Zhang Ying Hao lit a cigarette and mused.

“The last time we discussed this, Liao Xing was also here, but we couldn’t come up with anything even after a long while” Gu Qing Shan commented.

“Then—— how about we think of one now?” Ye Fei Li suggested.

“Why now?” Zhang Ying Hao asked.

“We just got a new recruit, but we don’t even have a name to introduce ourselves with. If we continue gaining more and more members later on, wouldn’t we seem like a big joke?” Ye Fei Li explained.

Gu Qing Shan and Zhang Ying Hao thought for a bit, then nodded: “Makes sense...”

Ye Ru Xi had been silently listening for a while, then couldn’t help herself but cut in at this point: “Hold on for a bit—-- our organization still doesn’t even have a name?”

The three of them all appeared a bit embarrassed.

“We’ve just been so busy that we don’t have the time to think about one. How about you brainstorm for a name with us as well? You’re a collaborator now after all” Gu Qing Shan suggested.

“Ah... I’m not really good with naming things... alright, let us all brainstorm for a name” Ye Ru Xi replied.

“How about we call ourselves the Nightwalkers?” Zhang Ying Hao suggested.

“Why?”

“Hitmen always hide and act in the shadows” Zhang Ying Hao explained.

“I like the name, but within the 900 million World Layers, there are at least a dozen organizations with the same name” Gu Qing Shan shrugged.

“Then we’d get confused” Zhang Ying Hao shook his head, “It’s so hard to avoid the name of countless organizations within the infinite worlds within the 900 million World Layers is too hard of a task”

Everyone agreed.

This was an extremely hard task.

“How about Victory Hall?” Ye Fei Li suggested.

“Why?”

“It’s a friendly name, but it assumes that we’re always going to win” Ye Fei Li replied.

“Sounds too street-like, not very solemn” Ye Ru Xi shook her head.

She suggested: “I feel like we should have a name that no one else had come up with before”

“That’s true, but what should we be called?” Gu Qing Shan crossed his arms.

“Let’s follow this train of thought...”

...

The four of them discussed for a long while, then even spent some time for a meal, a drink, and another passionate debate—

Up until the computer gave off an alarm.

[Master, there’s 25 minutes left until the enemy reaches this base]

The four of them had to stop.

Zhang Ying Hao rubbed his temples: “Hah, what a headache. Next time, let’s not discuss this problem right before a battle”

“Are those two monsters really that tough? I don’t think they look very powerful” Ye Ru Xi doubtfully asked.

The other three stayed silent.

Gu Qing Shan then explained: “They’re both like us so their strength is currently being suppressed, but they are actually very powerful”

“Then about the naming problem? We discussed for such a long time already, we should at least agree on something” Ye Fei Li was reluctant to brush it off.

Gu Qing Shan decided and announced: “Among the infinite worlds, it’s very hard to find a name that others haven’t already taken, but names themselves are meant to leave a deep impression, so if someone asks us about it later on, we’ll just tell them ‘Don’t Know Yet’”

“””Don’t Know Yet?”””” the other three repeated in unison.

“That’s right, Don’t Know Yet”

Zhang Ying Hao, Ye Fei Li, and Ye Ru Xi all remained silent.

“That... makes sense” Zhang Ying Hao mused.

“And it does leave a deep impression” Ye Fei Li followed up.

Ye Ru Xi was a bit more reliable than they are, so she had already thought of the consequences of this:

...

While traveling the infinite worlds and fighting against an enemy, they suddenly announced their identity and said: “I am XXX something or other, who are you?”

How should I answer that?

Should I answer: “I am Ye Ru Xi, from Don’t Know Yet”

—-will there actually be a fight after this?

Won't the enemy laugh themselves to death?

...

Ye Ru Xi clenched her teeth a bit, then said: "Then, what if we come up with a better sounding name later on?"

""Of course we're going to use the better sounding name!""

Gu Qing Shan, Zhang Ying Hao, and Ye Fei Li replied in unison.

Watching the three of them, Ye Ru Xi realized something.

They really couldn't come up with any good name.

...

What kind of organization did I actually join?

Chapter 1203

On the satellite surveillance footage, the Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler were quickly moving forward.

This time, they paid close attention to their surroundings and managed to avoid several forced teleportations.

Finally, they arrived in the city.

On top of an observation deck, Zhang Ying Hao raised his rifle.

"One shot, one chance"

He muttered and slowly entered a state of absolute concentration.

Within his crosshair, the Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler were slowly approaching the research center.

They abruptly stopped.

In front of them, Gu Qing Shan, Ye Fei Li, and Ye Ru Xi stood waiting at the gate of the research center.

The Soul Shrieker's gaze fell onto Ye Ru Xi.

「 『 Unawaken Deity of [Chaos], I am the same kind as you, you should come with me 』 」 the Soul Shrieker stated.

Hearing that, Ye Ru Xi couldn't help but look at it.

One half of its face had the visage of a cruel man, while the other half was of a grudgeful woman.

Six arms.

Half-naked.

Same kind...

Ye Ru Xi scowled: "Someone like you—— is my same kind?"

「 『 Indeed 』 」 the Soul Shrieker started exuding grey fog from its body, displaying the Law of [Chaos] for Ye Ru Xi to see.

It then continued: 「 『 I wield the unlimited divine power from the Era of [Chaos], I can help you, grant you power, and allow you to awaken faster 』 」

Ye Ru Xi took a step back and casually said: "You're too weak, no need to tell me such nonsense"

Seeing how resolute she was, the Soul Shrieker gave up on that idea for now.

*—-if she is so sure about that, Gu Qing Shan must have used some sort of method to win her trust.
I was so slow that I've already lost that chance.*

The Soul Shrieker's killing intent began to boil and focus on Gu Qing Shan.

『 Gu Qing Shan 』

『 From the Age of Old until this moment, it has been a very long time 』 the Soul Shrieker spoke first with its female voice, then changed to its male voice: 「 It is finally time for us to end this 」

“Indeed, I've been waiting for a very long time for today” Gu Qing Shan replied.

The Soul Shrieker scoffed: 『 「 Waiting? Haven't you been fleeing all this time? 』 』

“Because I couldn't defeat you back then” Gu Qing Shan answered straight.

The Soul Shrieker took a step forward and shouted: 「 『 And you assume you can win against me now? 』 』

Gu Qing Shan simply replied: “Your powers have already been sealed”

He reached into the void of space and grabbed the twin swords Heaven and Earth in both hands.

His sword qi surged forward.

The Soul Shrieker was drawn by the twin swords, then started speaking with a deeply ingrained tone: 『 「 Gu Qing Shan, you do not deserve to wield these two Soul Artifact swords, they both have their own missions to accomplish 』 』

Gu Qing Shan concentrated on those words and replied: “I remember that the forging of these two swords was originally your plan— what did you initially intended to use these swords for?”

The Soul Shrieker didn’t answer.

Gu Qing Shan continued: “The Greatest Above the Crown Star once told me that these two swords were created for the sake of defeating the wicked creature guarding the bottom of the Abyss, but I highly doubt that you would have dedicated yourself to doing such a thing for the Abyss”

The Soul Shrieker suddenly grinned.

「 If you’re talking this much, you are surely attempting some sort of different scheme or plot— a dead man shouldn’t be talking so much! 」

It rushed towards Gu Qing Shan.

In an instant.

Gu Qing Shan faced it with his swords.

Before any change occurred.

The entire world fell silent.

Lines of text appeared in front of everyone’s eyes:

[An emergency mission had been issued]

[Please cease your fighting and focus on completing the Apotheotic Combat as your priority]

[No one, regardless of who they are, can go against the will of Chaos nor kill your competition, as all of you must complete this pivotal mission from Chaos]

[Violating the above rules will result in the immediate disqualification of your Apotheosis]

Clang!

The twin swords clashed against a spear.

Intense gusts of wind blew in every direction.

Gu Qing Shan and the Soul Shrieker both stood still.

Ye Fei Li had already wielded the Forgetting River Soul Flaying Hook and blew a high-pitched whistle to cause the two monsters' bodies to briefly freeze up.

Bang!

The sound of gunshot resounded from afar.

The Raging Flame Traveler was struck and halted from advancing further.

At this split second, a sword appeared from behind, deeply cutting into his neck.

———Gu Qing Shan.

This was the real Gu Qing Shan!

He wielded the Chao Yin sword as he stood behind the Raging Flame Traveler, only a hair away from beheading the other party.

All the grey text had finished displaying.

Gu Qing Shan stopped.

“Tsk, so we can’t kill competitors, why didn’t you say that sooner?” he regretfully said.

The ‘Gu Qing Shan’ who was holding the Soul Shrieker back suddenly turned back into Shannu.

Both Shannu and the Soul Shrieker retreated.

Please support our website and read on novelbold

Neither side continued to fight.

Everyone looked at the grey text floating in front of them.

Gu Qing Shan, Zhang Ying Hao, and Ye Fei Li all had the same mission:

[You have obtained Ye Ru Xi’s recognition]

[She will follow you and leave this world, then locate a unique path for Chaos that leads toward ‘that’ secret palace]

[To gain victory in this Apotheotic Combat, you must accompany her and aid her in locating that unique path]

[You only have 30 minutes!]

[Attention, this will be the decisive 30 minutes, as well as a pivotal moment for the Era of Chaos itself, do not waste time with your competitors!]

The three of them exchanged glances.

For [Chaos] to suddenly issue such a mission.

Something definitely must have happened.

Gu Qing Shan asked: “What if our competitors insist on wasting our time?”

A new line of grey text appeared:

[During this Apotheotic Combat, your competitors have received an entirely different trial, they will not interfere with you]

[Remember, this is the Apotheotic Combat of Chaos, and Chaos retains the right of final judgment]

Ye Fei Li read the last line and couldn't help but ask: “What does this mean?”

“It means that we shouldn't stay here to fight them to death, we need to follow the rules of the Apotheotic Combat” Zhang Ying Hao replied.

Whoever [Chaos] pronounced as the victor would undergo apotheosis and become its Deity.

At a time like this, if they angered [Chaos], the Soul Shrieker could still become the founding Deity for the Era of [Chaos].

Which meant they would still not be able to kill it.

“Alright, let's go then. Although this is a bit unexpected, as long as we still want to kill the Soul Shrieker, we would need to kick it off its Deity pedestal” Gu Qing Shan stated

The four people turned to the Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler.

These two monsters stood in place, apparently receiving a new mission.

The Soul Shrieker turned around, refusing to face the four of them.

Gu Qing Shan took notice of that and asked: “[Chaos], what is their mission?”

[To help you prevent and stop any possible assailants] – [Chaos] replied.

Gu Qing Shan was surprised.

...No wonder the Soul Shrieker refuses to say a single word.

We were still enemies who wanted to kill one another just a moment ago, but now they had suddenly been ordered to protect their enemies.

No one would want to face the other party in such a situation.

...

A few moments later.

The warp fluctuations slowly calmed down.

Their group of four now stood on a certain beach.

Gu Qing Shan, Zhang Ying Hao, and Ye Fei Li all looked at Ye Ru Xi.

“I can see a notification, is this the power of [Chaos]?”

Ye Ru Xi watched the void of space, seemingly also reading something.

She pondered a bit, then told him: “If the place my UI referred to was ‘that’ place, we need to do something first before we can go”

“What is that?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

Ye Ru Xi looked towards the void of space behind him and explained: “Under the current situation, only your sword can take us there”

Gu Qing Shan asked: "So when you looked at my sword that time, it was because you could feel its power?"

"Yes, I have a certain unique ability to appraise the unique abilities of items by looking at them. Your sword is able to part open the sea, as well as undoing the seal that the Oceanic Divine Artifact has on my body" Ye Ru Xi explained.

"A seal?" Gu Qing Shan asked.

The void of space fluctuated.

The Chao Yin sword appeared from the void of space and landed in his hand.

"What should I do?" Gu Qing Shan asked.

"Come with me into the sea, open the seal of the ocean, and release my power" Ye Ru Xi replied.

The three of them were stunned.

"You're currently in a sealed state?" Zhang Ying Hao asked in disbelief.

Ye Ru Xi appeared nostalgic, then replied: "Ever since I was 5 years old, I had been able to summon inexplicable things and entities into existence"

"As I grew older, this ability became stronger and stronger"

"According to my own estimations, by the time I reach 10 years old, the summoned object would become unimaginably powerful, and its mere presence would destroy this entire world"

"So I prayed for 3 full days and night, which ultimately ended with the summoning of a certain entity who pitied my circumstances"

"That entity used a certain sealing technique to suppress the power contained within me into an Oceanic Divine Artifact"

"This way, I would be able to enjoy a relatively normal life while also calling upon a certain amount of power that would ensure I don't destroy this world"

The three of them silently listened.

Zhang Ying Hao wiped the sweat off his forehead and whispered: "In other words, your current strength is only your power after it was sealed"

"Yes" Ye Ru Xi replied.

Gu Qing Shan carefully recalled the memory he witnessed.

At that time...

When she summoned the bronze finger that crushed an entire city.

She seemed to have already grown older than 10 years old.

In other words, even after she was sealed, she could still summon such immense power.

Then, if she was unsealed, how unimaginable would her power actually be!?

Ye Ru Xi continued: "Once my power is unsealed, I will be able to open a unique path heading towards a certain world, so we now need to find and unseal that artifact"

She pointed at the ocean.

Gu Qing Shan sighed and replied: "Let's go, we'll do it immediately"

He wielded the Chao Yin sword.

The ocean retreated.

All the seawater parted ways to reveal a straight road that headed directly into the depth of the sea.

The monsters who remained under the sea could not escape from the water, helpless to do anything but be swept away by the Chao Yin sword's divine power and be chased away.

"Eastward, 300 miles" Ye Ru Xi stated.

Chapter 1204

The inner regions of the destroyed city.

The Soul Shrieker was silently staring at the sky with a heavy expression.

I really can't understand why [Chaos] had issued me such a mission.

It couldn't help but recite simultaneously with both of its male and female voice: 『 『 Endless [Chaos], I was the founder of the Era, why did you have me remain here to prevent an unknown danger to my enemy? 』 』

Lines of grey text appeared in front of its eyes:

[Everything is judged with the search for the ultimate secret as a priority]

[Whether it is you, or the other side of the Apotheotic Combat, both sides must work towards this goal as hard as possible]

[An excellent display during this process will grant you appropriate rewards]

Soul Shrieker continued to stare, still completely puzzled.

『 『 Reward? 』 』 it asked.

[Indeed] [Chaos] replied, [You do not need to worry, once the path leading to the ultimate secret is opened, you shall be directly transported over]

[For now, stop the countless enemies that are coming your way]

All the text disappeared.

The Soul Shrieker quickly noticed something and looked up.

One after another, sprites of light appeared from above the sky.

They were radiant and immense, filled with solemnity and power that begets a desire to worship in the human mind.

『 「 So it was the foul stench of [Order], I understand now 』 』

The Soul Shrieker howled in a deep voice.

—it seems my main responsibility will be to buy time for that Deity of [Chaos], allowing her to reach that mysterious path.

Next to the Soul Shrieker, the Raging Flame Traveler suddenly shouted:

「 Too many! That is too many! 』

In the sky above, so many sprites of light had manifested that it appeared like a river of stars.

They were descending towards the two of them at an unimaginable speed.

The Raging Flame Traveler remained silent for one breath's worth of them, then loudly declared: 「 [Chaos], I give up on this Apotheotic Combat, please transport me back 』

The Soul Shrieker's expression warped and shouted as it caught his shoulder: 「 『 You're mad! If you leave now, do you expect me to stop them all by myself!? 』 』

The Raging Flame Traveler lightly knocked the Soul Shrieker's hand away and asked in return: 「 I nearly lost my life just now, do you understand? 」

The Soul Shrieker froze.

Earlier, Gu Qing Shan's sword had already cut through half of the Raging Flame Traveler's neck, if [Chaos] hadn't suddenly intervened, the Raging Flame Traveler would have already died.

The Raging Flame Traveler continued in a harrowing voice: 「 I have a lengthy lifespan, wield great strength, and possess numerous supernatural abilities; but that man's sword was too fast, he did not give me any chance to even use my power! 」

「 I know that I'm vastly stronger than him in numerous ways, I even have a few unique abilities that can directly take his life— but facing him, I have no chance to act! 」

「 He is a true God of Death! 」

The Raging Flame Traveler roared with a fearful voice: 「 And I have no desire to be the enemy of someone like that! 」

The two of them paused.

「 『 I really didn't expect for you to also be a useless failure 』 」 the Soul Shrieker scoffed.

At the same time, the grey text of [Chaos] appeared in front of them:

[Regardless of whether or not you leave the Apotheotic Combat, both of you must face the enemy at this very moment]

[Remember well, this is a pivotal moment for Chaos]

[Those who flee shall die]

Before the Raging Flame Traveler could say anything, three new lines of notifications appeared in front of their eyes:

[In consideration of the many Orders that had arrived, the following judgment had been made:]

[This operation has been exposed]

[From this point on, you may exert all of your powers to resist Order]

The Raging Flame Traveler's body trembled.

He could feel his restrained power being fully released again.

He had returned to his normal state.

「 That's better, at least there's a chance to stall them now 」

He mumbled to himself and turned to the Soul Shrieker.

Only to see the Soul Shrieker's body also emanating an eerie pressure.

A profound and dreadful chill continuously radiated from the Soul Shrieker's body, like an invisible fluctuation that quickly spread all over the sky.

「 『 Carriers of [Order] who came from distant worlds! You pitiful fools should never assume yourself to be so arrogant, as you are merely conduits for the souls 」 』

『 「 And souls, are mine to consume 』 」

At the next blink of an eye——

A mixed male and female voice resounded in a chant-like shriek: 「 『 SOULS! OFFERING UP YOUR SOULS TO ME, AAEEEE————— 」 』

The dreadful shriek echoed throughout this world.

...

At another location.

Gu Qing Shan, Zhang Ying Hao, Ye Fei Li, and Ye Ru Xi stood at the bottom of the ocean.

All the seawater in a radius of several kilometers had been pushed away from them.

No oceanic monster could ever reach this place.

Zhang Ying Hao looked at this miraculous scene and couldn't help but ask: "Hey, can you perform this feat as long as you wield that sword?"

"No" Gu Qing Shan replied, "I need to spend power of the soul for it"

Ye Ru Xi stated: "This is a very unique sword. Gu Qing Shan, I need you to use the power of this sword to undo my seal for me to retrieve my power"

"Is it that thing?" Ye Fei Li asked.

"Yes" Ye Ru Xi replied.

Immediately in front of them, a spherical bronze object silently laid motionlessly on the seabed.

This bronze sphere wasn't particularly special, it only had a single small slot that seemed to fit some sort of key.

Observing this bronze sphere, Gu Qing Shan felt a bit strange.

Bronze...

Please support our website and read on [novelbold](#)

The giant corpse was also imprisoned on top of a bronze pillar.

Would there be any link between them?

Gu Qing Shan walked forward and placed his hand on top of the sphere.

Lines of glowing text quickly appeared on the War God UI:

[Dreamscape Soul Artifact: Seal of the Ocean]

[This is a Dreamscape Soul Artifact created for the sake of sealing power, it is able to suppress the dreamscape shuttling power to a terrific degree]

Gu Qing Shan immediately asked: “What’s a Dreamscape Soul Artifact?”

His Soul Points value on the War God UI was silently deducted by 200.

The War God UI answered: [The most powerful Soul Artifact within any Reality Gate is a Dreamscape Soul Artifact]

[Firstly, this type of Soul Artifact is the long-cherished goal of all beings, any mortal who wishes to obtain such a thing would only be able to do so in their dreams]

[Secondly, this type of Soul Artifact is used to suppress or release the ability to use the dreamscape shuttling power of an individual. This power is actually the most powerful available within any Reality Gate]

Gu Qing Shan gasped.

Who would’ve thought that I would run into such a thing at this place?

After thinking, Gu Qing Shan asked: “How should I help Ye Ru Xi release her power? And what is the dreamscape shuttling power?”

The War God UI replied: [Each Dreamscape Soul Artifact has its own unique target, so the answer to this can only be found out through knowing the identity of the sealed individual]

Another 200 Soul Points was directly deducted.

“So even you have to see through her identity in order to see the truth?” Gu Qing Shan purposefully asked.

[Naturally, I am the War God UI, not an omnipotent encyclopedia] the War God UI replied.

This time, it deducted 400 Soul Points.

Gu Qing Shan didn't mind it too much and stood up to look at Ye Ru Xi.

“What should I do now?” he asked.

Ye Ru Xi looked at the Chao Yin sword in his hand and explained: “This sword of yours is... let's just say that it can suppress the oceans of infinite worlds, but also unleash that vast power”

“So you will need to thrust this sword into this seal, then communicate with the sword through your will to make it help you undo the power of the seal.

Gu Qing Shan nodded and sent his voice to the Chao Yin sword: “Are there any issues?”

The Chao Yin sword casually vibrated as an answer.

Gu Qing Shan relaxed a bit, then thrust the Chao Yin sword into the bronze sphere.

One breath.

Two breaths.

Three breaths.

The Chao Yin sword emanated a deep blue glow.

The bronze sphere suddenly broke apart, turning into various components, and shot towards Ye Ru Xi.

A black eye patch covered her left eye.

A yellowish-green metal mask covered her mouth.

A thin length of bronze chain restrained her right arm.

Both of her feet had been wrapped in heavy shackles.

“Xiiii— hoh—”

Ye Ru Xi took a deep and sharp inward breath.

“What happened? Aren’t we undoing the seal? Why did she become restrained instead?” Zhang Ying Hao doubtfully asked.

“It’s nothing, the seal had indeed been released, 10% of my power is now free” Ye Ru Xi’s voice resounded from behind her mask.

She displayed the things all over her body for everyone to see and explained:

“My eye can contact the Awaitings, my mouth can call upon them, my right arm can be reinforced with their techniques, my feet can arrange their formations of great power, so they should indeed be restrained like this”

Gu Qing Shan asked: “What are the Awaitings?”

Ye Ru Xi replied: "I'm not really sure, just that I've been able to sense them since I was young. I've always felt like they were waiting for something, so I refer to them as the Awaitings"

Gu Qing Shan carefully pondered this term, feeling like it carried a deeper hidden meaning.

He recalled the bronze finger he saw in Ye Ru Xi's dreamscape.

At that time, there was a voice---

...

「The age of Apocalypse has yet to end, it is not time for me to awaken, who is calling for me? 」

...

Before Gu Qing Shan could think any further, what came next cut off his train of thought.

Ye Ru Xi undid her mask and muttered: "I have to leave this world as soon as possible, otherwise, once my power is released, this world would definitely be destroyed"

She began chanting an incantation:

"The mourning bell of the Apocalypse resound outside the Reality Gate"

"Entities hiding in the shadow, cautiously awaiting"

"Heed my words"

"The Era of all endings has yet to pass"

"But I"

"The herald of your dawn now requires a path leading towards the ultimate secret"

The incantation was finished.

Instantly, the entire world disappeared from the four's visions.

Complete darkness.

A stairway made completely of grey fog silently manifested and appeared beneath their feet.

The stairway of grey fog was connected to the darkness of the void, reaching endlessly far outside of one's vision.

"Alright, let's go" Ye Ru Xi said.

Zhang Ying Hao and Ye Fei Li followed her onto the grey fog.

Gu Qing Shan followed behind the three of them, but his gaze was focused on the void of space in front of himself.

Lines of new glowing text appeared on the War God UI:

[The other party's identity has been confirmed]

[Ye Ru Xi, Harbinger of Apocalypse' End]

Chapter 1205

"What's a 'Harbinger of Apocalypse's End'?" Gu Qing Shan asked as he walked.

[Unclear, there aren't many similar titles, but each of them holds a completely different meaning] the War God UI replied: [You will need to observe her fate closely, only then would you understand the significance of this title]

"In other words, I have to look for the answer from her myself"

[Correct]

Gu Qing Shan didn't ask anything else and followed the three others forward.

Beneath his feet, the grey fog continuously spread.

Layers upon layers of fog converged to form stairs, leading the four of them into the endless nothingness.

Gu Qing Shan found his spirit sense to be completely useless here.

His sight could not see anything ahead of him either.

Clink clank, clink clank, clink clank—

While they walked, the shackles on Ye Ru Xi's feet were dragged along the stairs, causing the clanging sound of metal.

After a short while, she became fully relaxed.

"At this point, we've thoroughly gotten away from my world" she said.

"If you could already escape this way, why didn't you run away by yourself before?" Zhang Ying Hao asked.

Ye Ru Xi shook her head and replied: "If I had done so, the ordinary people of that world would have been mercilessly massacred by Apocalypse, which I could not bear myself to allow happen"

She turned around and looked over Gu Qing Shan, Zhang Ying Hao, and Ye Fei Li.

"Thank you for getting rid of the Apocalypse, so that I can leave without any worries" she gratefully thanked them.

“No need to be so formal, we’re comrades now” Zhang Ying Hao smiled.

Ye Fei Li nodded in agreement.

“That’s right, what kind of place is the ultimate secret supposed to be?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

Ye Ru Xi replied: “We’re about to arrive, but entering the palace is only the very first step, everything else will depend on your suitability”

“Suitability to what?” Ye Fei Li asked.

“To the Awaitings” Ye Ru Xi appeared a bit respectfully frightened and replied.

She suddenly stopped, reached out her hand, then lightly tapped the void of space.

Grey fog intensely surged forward, then quickly parted ways.

A gigantic bronze gate that reached the high clouds above slowly manifested from within the fog.

This gate knew no boundaries, nor any thickness, just by looking at it, one would feel an untold sense of vicissitudes and ancientness.

——as if this bronze gate had always been here, hidden in the fog, simply uncovered by anyone.

The gate opened.

A weak green glow then quickly covered the space around the gate.

“Don’t touch it, this is a talisman barrier, those without permission cannot enter”

Ye Ru Xi was explaining to the other three when a high-pitched screech resounded from an extreme distance away.

In just a few moments, that sound had reached the four of them.

Two figures suddenly landed in front of the four.

The Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler.

They were completely covered in wounds with blood still seeping from within; quite clearly, they had gone through an extremely tough battle.

Their presence had returned to their peak state, but Gu Qing Shan’s group was still in a suppressed state.

“What were you fighting?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

The Soul Shrieker scoffed and asked in return: 『 「 Do you really think I’m going to tell you? 」 』

The Raging Flame Traveler also stated: 「 Don’t even think about obtaining any information from us! 」

They stared closely at Gu Qing Shan, their killing intent practically boiling, but still did not try to attack.

——they currently sided with [Chaos], and [Chaos] had forbidden the two sides from fighting in this crucial moment.

A second later.

Please support our website and read on novelbold

Grey text quickly appeared in front of their eyes:

[Attention, this is the final battle within the Apotheotic Combat]

A single line of text drew the total attention of both sides.

Everyone focused their minds.

New lines of grey text started to manifest one after another:

[Order can no longer reach this place, so you are temporarily safe]

[But you all shoulder the responsibility for the ultimate goal of Chaos, so you must accept the true trial of Chaos right at this location]

[To achieve true Apotheosis, you must search for it yourselves]

[From this moment onwards, you must raise the flames of your willpower and walk the path of your fates, searching for that unique path and climb the steps onto your Godhood]

[They who succeed will become the Deity of Chaos, thus wielding the true power of our Era]

[Go]

[The ultimate secret of Chaos had finally been opened]

All the grey text slowly faded after they finished displaying.

Suddenly, a new line of text appeared:

[Ye Ru Xi is an innate Deity of Chaos, she does not need to do anything but wait for the results of others]

Everyone turned to Ye Ru Xi.

“In truth, after entering the ultimate secret, I wouldn’t be able to help you with anything either way. Everyone can only depend on themselves to search” Ye Ru Xi explained.

“Do you have any experience you’d like to share?” Zhang Ying Hao asked.

It wasn’t just Gu Qing Shan and Ye Fei Li, but also the Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler who perked up their ears to listen.

Ye Ru Xi shook her head: “My experiences would do more harm than good if I reveal them to you, as the situation that everyone faces would be different from one another”

Everyone appeared a bit disappointed.

Without changing her expression, Ye Ru Xi silently sent her voice to the other three:

“Listen clearly, there are a number of statues inside where an Awaiting’s will can descend upon”

“If you touch the glowing statues, you will awaken the corresponding Awaiting who will test you. If they are pleased with your performance, they will grant their [Chaos] seed of power to you, allowing you to become a Deity of Chaos and usher in the new Era”

“You can also touch the destroyed statues, but there is a certain degree of danger in doing that—— as their corresponding Awaitings are already dead. Their seed of [Chaos] might be incomplete or withered, so although you can still obtain power from them, there would be no telling how far they’d be able to aid you grow”

“Seeds of [Chaos]?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

Ye Ru Xi replied: “Yes, they are born from a single strand of power, from which they would eventually grow into a complete system of supernatural power”

Gu Qing Shan immediately questioned: “Isn’t that the same as the archetypes of [Order] and [Chaos]?”

“No, as they do not reinforce, evolve, and grow. This is power that has already reached its ultimate form— a kind of entrustment and blessing from the creator of [Chaos]” Ye Ru Xi explained.

The three of them held their breaths.

Creator— of [Chaos].

“Does [Order] have a creator as well?” Gu Qing Shan asked right away.

“They are the other Awaitings, they do not reside here, nor would they heed my call” Ye Ru Xi replied.

Gu Qing Shan’s mind quickly moved around; he then asked the War God UI: “I assume that there is another unique Deity from the side of [Order] whose identity is essentially the same as Ye Ru Xi”

[There is] the War God UI replied.

“What kind of Deity are they?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

[They are called the Slumbering Era’s Songster of Night, but they had never appeared] the War God UI replied.

Gu Qing Shan fell silent.

Harbinger of Apocalypse’s End.

Slumbering Era’s Songster of Night.

Titles represent a mission, responsibility, achievement, power, and experience. They are related to the Laws of Fate, so a true Title must be recognized by a corresponding Law.

Such Titles contain a unique domain of power, they do not simply come into existence by randomly calling out a name.

—-because of this, Titles themselves can also reveal the secret of certain things to a certain degree.

These two Titles are of corresponding entities from [Chaos] and [Order], which seem to have some sort of mysterious link.

Then...

Between [Order] and [Chaos], are there any links aside from them being mutual nemesis?

Gu Qing Shan slowly pondered and faintly came up with a few conjectures.

At this point, Ye Ru Xi reached her hand out to touch the green glowing barrier.

She muttered: "The Awaiting who rests in slumber, I have brought the heirs of [Chaos], they crave to obtain strength and fulfill the mission of [Chaos]"

A mysterious rune manifested above the green glowing barrier.

A second later, everyone was sucked in.

Chapter 1206

The green glow flashed briefly in the middle of a palace before vanishing.

Several people showed themselves.

Gu Qing Shan, Ye Ru Xi, Zhang Ying Hao, Ye Fei Li, the Soul Shrieker, and the Raging Flame Traveler.

Ye Ru Xi crossed her arms: "Now, you may begin attempting to communicate with the Awaitings"

Everyone examined their surroundings.

The entire palace was forged out of solid bronze, completely empty and deep enough that one could not see the other end.

Inside the bronze palace, various statues stood silently.

These statues each had a different appearance, some were humanoid, some looked like monsters that had never been seen before, as well as some who weren't humanoid or monsters, no one could even tell what they were.

Gu Qing Shan even saw a sphere surrounded by spikes on all sides, fully encompassed inside a 3D triangular frame of bronze.

This is an Awaiting as well?

Everyone was silently surprised but quickly calmed themselves down.

—-*they are unimaginable entities, the Awaitings who created [Chaos].*

With that thought in mind, everyone no longer found it hard to accept how strange these statues were.

Soul Shrieker questioned: 『 「 Is there anything to pay attention to? 」 』

Ye Ru Xi replied: “Nothing at all, the only thing is to hope that you will be favored when you touch a statue”

The Soul Shrieker and Raging Flame Traveler were a bit unconvinced.

Ye Ru Xi became silent again, refusing to say another word.

She silently used telepathy to tell Gu Qing Shan's trio: “You must remain respectful while wishing for power in your mind when you touch the statues, and also wish to accomplish more for the Era of [Chaos]”

The three of them understood without expressing it.

For now, no one moved a muscle.

At a glance, everyone was silently judging each statue, as their apotheosis into a Deity of [Chaos] depended on this single opportunity.

—-it was an unimaginably still moment.

A second later.

Someone finally moved.

Gu Qing Shan circulated spirit energy throughout his entire body and suddenly shot towards a certain direction.

Before anyone could react, he had already arrived in front of a destroyed statue.

“Ye Ru Xi, this was the statue you mentioned right?” Gu Qing Shan loudly asked.

Even as he did so, his hand was reaching towards the destroyed statue.

In the blink of an eye—-

Fwoom!

A jet of heat shot from afar to push Gu Qing Shan several meters away.

The Raging Flame Traveler had replaced Gu Qing Shan in front of the destroyed statue.

His powers had been fully released, even though he was under a restriction from [Chaos] to not kill Gu Qing Shan, it was quite simple for him to push Gu Qing Shan away.

Gu Qing Shan appeared to stagger a bit as he regained his balance from the jet of heat.

He angrily shouted: “There are so many statues, why are you stealing the one I chose!”

「 You chose? 」

The Raging Flame Traveler looked at him, then turned to Ye Ru Xi and smirked: 「 I knew that you were definitely hiding something 」

He flashed a triumphant smile and put his hand onto the destroyed statue.

A faint, dim glow slowly manifested from the statue.

In a flash, the Raging Flame Traveler was enveloped by this faint glow and whisked away.

Gu Qing Shan sighed and mumbled to himself: “He took it first”

Everyone remained silent.

Ye Ru Xi silently sent her voice: “I never mentioned anything about that statue——”

“I know” Gu Qing Shan cut her off, “But you did say that it would be very hard to obtain a seed of power from a destroyed statue, didn’t you?”

Ye Ru Xi confusedly replied: “Yes”

“So I let him go” Gu Qing Shan said.

It was only now that Ye Ru Xi managed to understand what just happened.

——Gu Qing Shan just fooled the other party.

...What a sly guy

Ye Ru Xi silently thought.

All of a sudden, the sound of clapping could be heard.

Everyone turned back to see that it was the Soul Shrieker.

While clapping, it spoke with both its male and female voices: 「 『 What a good act that was, Gu Qing Shan 』 』

Gu Qing Shan didn't mind and casually smiled: "How did you find out?"

『 「 Your friends' expressions 』 』

The Soul Shrieker replied: 「 『 All of your comrades were completely stunned, as well as this Deity of [Chaos], when you mentioned that destroyed statue, she appeared confused 』 』

『 「 Because of that, she did not tell you about that statue 』 』

「 『 You were trying to deceive us 』 』

It shrugged with two of its hands and continued: 『 「 To be frank, you might have been able to fool me if you tried that when you're alone, but thanks to your friends, I'll know right away whenever you're trying to pull something 』 』

"How impressive" Gu Qing Shan praised.

Zhang Ying Hao and Ye Fei Li finally realized what just happened.

"I can't believe we weren't able to follow up"

Zhang Ying Hao sighed and took out a few pairs of sunglasses from his pocket.

“This is standard equipment for those who travel the infinite worlds, it can hide the changes on one’s expression”

He wore one of them himself, then gave one to Ye Fei Li.

Ye Fei Li said: “But we’re already exposed”

“Better late than never” Zhang Ying Hao replied.

Ye Fei Li accepted the sunglasses and put them on.

Zhang Ying Hao then offered Ye Ru Xi one pair as well.

Ye Ru Xi said: “I have an eyepatch and a mask”

“But your emotions were exposed earlier as well” Zhang Ying Hao replied.

Ye Ru Xi reluctantly accepted them and put them on.

Zhang Ying Hao looked at Gu Qing Shan, then put the last pair away, saying: “You don’t need one, you’re the cinema king”

“...” Gu Qing Shan.

He then turned to Soul Shrieker and said: “You already noticed, but you didn’t try to warn the Raging Flame Traveler about it at all, how perplexing”

Please support our website and read on novelbold

The Soul Shrieker started to speak in its male voice with a deeper tone: 「 I am he who ushered in [Chaos], the strongest True Deity, other than that useless God of Life, I don't need another piece of garbage to compete for my authority 」

It suddenly sat down and closed its eyes.

『 「 Before you all choose your statues, I won't move a muscle 』 」 it stated.

Everyone exchanged glances as they heard that.

How to say this——

Without knowing any information, the only way to obtain trustworthy information would be to observe the choices of Gu Qing Shan's group.

This was the only solution, but the most under-handed one.

——they honestly didn't think the Soul Shrieker would immediately resort to this shameless mean.

“Alright, let's ignore it and choose by our instincts”

Gu Qing Shan sent his voice.

Ye Ru Xi also said: “That's right, each of you should search by yourself, sense and examine the Awaiting that is most suitable to yourself”

“An Awaiting that suits you might not necessarily suit that monster—— so let's get to it. You will need to experiment and choose on your own”

Since these words made sense, the other three slightly nodded.

“I’ll take a look around” Zhang Ying Hao started walking in a certain direction.

“Then I’ll go this way— I think I can feel something attracting me over here” Ye Fei Li said.

He turned around and walked as he studied the statue of each Awaiting.

Gu Qing Shan stood still.

He could also sense a faint voice calling out to him.

This is a very familiar feeling.

Who exactly would be in a place like this...?

The Soul Shrieker’s eyes were opened just a bit, silently observing the group’s movements.

At this point, Ye Ru Xi turned to Gu Qing Shan and doubtfully asked: “Gu Qing Shan, aren’t you going?”

Gu Qing Shan regained his senses and turned to the Soul Shrieker who was sitting on the ground.

Their gazes met.

At this moment, although everything was peaceful and there was no danger to be seen, both sides clearly understood a certain thing.

—-this would be the final bout to decide their life and death.

Gu Qing Shan smiled: “Of course I am”

He no longer cared about the Soul Shrieker, sorted out the direction of the beckoning and walked through the silent palace.

...

In the palace, numerous statues were lined up one after the other

Gu Qing Shan's footsteps never stopped, continuously walking past each one.

This calling sensation... where exactly is it coming from?

He silently pondered.

It was as if there were countless beings whispering in his ears, whenever he walked in the right direction, the voice became louder, and weakened as he went down the wrong direction.

Gu Qing Shan slowly followed this guidance and reached a secluded location in the palace.

There was also a statue here.

—-a humanoid figure made out of gravel and sand stood on top of a pedestal.

However, this statue was so thoroughly destroyed that not even the humanoid figure's visage could be made out.

The faint calling voice from earlier came from this statue.

Even after observing for a while, Gu Qing Shan could only recognize the statue to be of a feminine form.

But, who could it be?

His gaze fell onto the gravel and sand.

“Sand...”

Gu Qing Shan pondered, then suddenly recalled a certain person.

The Unextinguishing Sand, the Wielder of Time, the Sovereign of Elemental Fairies, the Legendary Lady.

Fusi.

She is also the one who holds my secret.

As long as she exists, no one would ever find out that I am the Earth God of the Four Pillars Gods of the void.

But, why would her statue be in this place?

Is she perhaps also an Awaiting?

Countless questions appeared in Gu Qing Shan’s mind, causing him to be unable to reach the truth.

“Regardless...”

Gu Qing Shan muttered, then reached his hand out to touch the destroyed statue.

The gravel and sand that made up this statue completely scattered.

An invisible gust of wind began to manifest.

The gravel and sand quickly swirled around to envelop Gu Qing Shan.

In the blink of an eye, Gu Qing Shan had vanished from the bronze palace.

...

At another location in the bronze palace.

The Soul Shrieker suddenly stood up.

It was originally observing all three people but paid the closest attention to Gu Qing Shan.

Never did it think that Gu Qing Shan would choose a destroyed statue and directly vanish.

Could it be...

He had already awakened an Awaiting and is undergoing their trial?

The Soul Shrieker clenched its fists.

Once Gu Qing Shan passes the trial, what awaits me would be...

I can't wait any longer!

The Soul Shrieker quickly moved around to choose a statue from the palace.

While walking around, it analyzed all of Gu Qing Shan's movements ever since he first entered the bronze palace.

Gu Qing Shan.

The first time, he chose a destroyed statue to fool the Raging Flame Traveler.

The second time, he also chose a destroyed statue.

---a destroyed statue!

The Soul Shrieker slowly understood.

Perhaps this was an instinctive human behavior, even while deceiving others, he couldn't help but choose the more correct choice.

The Soul Shrieker glanced around the bronze palace.

Although there weren't many destroyed statues here, there were still quite a few.

『 「 Very well, I shall make my choice from within these destroyed statues... 』 』

The Soul Shrieker finally made a decision.

Chapter 1207

Two statues.

On top of one of them, several hundred skulls were weaved together to form a gigantic face.

The other statue was a bit destroyed, but it was made from two intertwining dragons – one blue, one red – which appeared mysterious.

The Soul Shrieker was hesitating to choose one of these two statues.

The gigantic face of skulls gave off a very special feeling.

But it could sense a familiar power emanating from the statue of intertwining dragons.

—furthermore, the intertwining dragons statue was already destroyed.

『 「 Destroyed... 』 』

The Soul Shrieker muttered before making its final decision.

It placed its hand very lightly on the two dragons.

The pair of dragons immediately came to life, danced around the Soul Shrieker, and brought it away from the bronze palace.

After the Soul Shrieker left.

Ye Fei Li had gone an entire circle around the palace and reached where the Soul Shrieker disappeared.

He stared closely at that statue.

——the statue of a gigantic face made from hundreds of different skulls.

Ye Fei Li silently stood for a while, then suddenly put the Clown mask on.

[I desire your great power]

He spoke to the statue.

The statue suddenly began to move.

The hundreds of skulls started moving in unison, causing one to feel an almost numbing sense of fright, but it also allowed the gigantic face's expression to change.

「 Feeble carrier of [Chaos], clown of mortals, why must I grant my powers to you? 」

The gigantic face observed the Clown and questioned.

The Clown respectfully bowed and replied: [The world needs me to display your great power]

The gigantic face spoke in a resounding voice:

「 Tell me, how do you think true [Chaos] can be achieved? 」

The Clown pondered, then replied: [Will and goal are both not Chaos, the essence of Chaos is that all things are void]

「 I shall grant you this chance, come and take your trial 」

After stating that, the gigantic face opened its mouth and swallowed Ye Fei Li whole.

At the very next moment.

The gigantic face also disappeared from the bronze palace.

Zhang Ying Hao returned to where Ye Ru Xi was standing after going around the entire palace.

He took out two shot glasses, poured some liquor, and offered one of them to Ye Ru Xi.

“You’ve already gone around the entire palace, right? Did you not find a suitable Awaiting?”

Ye Ru Xi asked.

Zhang Ying Hao replied: “Since both Gu Qing Shan and Ye Fei Li had found a suitable one, I don’t need to”

Ye Ru Xi asked in surprise: “Why not?”

Zhang Ying Hao emptied his glass, lit himself a cigar, and replied: "My heart aims at [Order], so there aren't any [Chaos] Awaitings who suit me"

Ye Ru Xi thought for a bit and chuckled.

"If I remember correctly, you said you were the boss of a hitman firm?" she said.

"I am" Zhang Ying Hao nodded.

"So a hitman aims at [Order] as well?" Ye Ru Xi asked.

"The animals in human skin who likes to abuse their power are the main targets of my hunt—-- and I enjoy that process"

Zhang Ying Hao breathed out a ring of smoke before continuing: "I hope for world peace and a comfortable life for all living beings. To reach this goal, I'd gladly hunt for my entire life"

Ye Ru Xi also emptied her shot glass, then gestured to Zhang Ying Hao to pour her some more.

"I'm in the [Chaos] faction, aren't you afraid I'll kill you for explaining how your heart aims for [Order] like this?" she smiled and asked.

Zhang Ying Hao topped up the two shot glasses and replied: "You aren't the kind of person to let power get to their heads, otherwise, your world would have already been destroyed long ago"

The shot glass returned to Ye Ru Xi's hand.

Staring closely at the amber-colored liquid inside, Ye Ru Xi whispered: "To be able to control your power to such minor degree, yet still capable of holding such firm beliefs in your heart, as expected of someone of my same kind"

She raised her glass.

“A toast to you, and to us all”

“A toast to those I couldn’t think of”

The two of them chuckled at that little joke.

They knocked their glasses together.

While they waited, that bottle of liquor was completely emptied.

...

A mass of light started to come into existence.

The graceful sound of ballroom music resonated from within the light, rousing a sense of peace within one’s mind.

Please support our website and read on [novelbold](#)

Gu Qing Shan was taken by the teleportation power into the mass of light.

He slowly landed on solid ground.

This was a cathedral— or perhaps the observation room on top of the highest palace.

A woman stood on top of a podium, wielding a scepter in her hand and a crown on her head with her back towards Gu Qing Shan, immersed in observing the vast world below.

The light glowed intensely.

The woman turned around and lightly chanted:

“Time cannot be chaotic, only by returning to its determined path can living beings be at peace”

An invisible force draped over Gu Qing Shan’s body, gradually expelling some sort of small and broken chaos.

Understanding what this was, Gu Qing Shan looked up to observe the other party.

—despite her being much younger than before, he could still recognize some of Lady Fusi’s features from her.

Gu Qing Shan bowed: “Lady Fusi, it has been a long time”

The woman smiled and replied: “You’ve matured very quickly. Even I can’t help but be impressed with the Earth Creator’s vision”

“Lady Fusi, are you an Awaiting of [Chaos]?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

Fusi simply smiled and replied: “It’s a long story, Earth God, there are more important matters that you must understand right now”

Fusi wielded her scepter and lightly tapped the void of space.

Everything started to change.

The world around them moved away.

Another world manifested around the two of them.

“The Reality Gate had been closed”

Following Fusi's voice, the two sides of a gate of unimaginable magnitude suddenly closed shut.

The sound of cheering from countless entities could be heard.

Some were so delighted that they were even sobbing.

"The Worlds' Apocalypse had destroyed everything. Only the entities who stood at the very peak, thanks to their unimaginably great power, managed to enter the Reality Gate to prolong their existence as well as to wait until the eventual end of the Apocalypse" Fusi continued.

Gu Qing Shan couldn't help but question: "What does it look like outside of the Reality Gate?"

Fusi seemingly didn't want to return to that scene of the past and only gave a curt answer:

"Infinite"

Infinite...

Gu Qing Shan carefully digested the implications of this word.

Fusi continued: "Even after long years of waiting, the Apocalypse outside of the Reality Gate never weakened at all"

"As time passed, some especially feeble Apocalypse had instead managed to infiltrate the inside of the Reality Gate"

"All of us realized something"

"We definitely must come up with a solution to study the Apocalypse, as well as find a way to eventually end it"

"Due to a difference in our ideology, we split up into two factions"

“One faction believed that the Apocalypse could not be fought against. It would only be when the Apocalypse had found that all living beings were dead would the world return to a blank slate, at which point the Apocalypse would end, and a new Era shall begin anew”

“The other faction believed that the life and death of living beings do not affect the Apocalypse. The Apocalypse would be never-ending and eternal, whenever living beings come into existence again, the Apocalypse would soon manifest like their shadow. For this reason, the only path of survival is to retaliate against it”

“To retaliate against the Apocalypse, more power, more profound knowledge and wisdom, as well as a better opportunity was required. Once living beings become powerful enough, there would eventually be a day when we can triumph against the Apocalypse— or at least, it would grant us all enough power to protect ourselves when the Reality Gate eventually collapses”

After stating that much, she turned to Gu Qing Shan.

Gu Qing Shan said: “I guess, this would be the origin of [Order] and [Chaos]”

“Indeed” Fusi appeared full of praise and continued: “The [Chaos] faction attempted some total destruction, which brought them reasonable results”

The scene of countless worlds being destroyed appeared all around them.

Whenever these worlds fell into complete destruction by [Chaos], the Apocalypse would gradually disappear after that as well.

— — — because the Apocalypse had lost its target.

“The [Order] faction also quickly attempted to educate living beings, allowing numerous shining civilizations to come into existence inside the Reality Gate, all of which came up with many solutions to retaliate against the Apocalypse”

Worlds started appearing around Gu Qing Shan one after another.

He saw numerous worlds of Technology, Magic, Savagery, Cultivation, Void, Mysticism, as well as others.

Numerous great men and heroes displayed their prowess with the intercepting eras, eventually leading their civilizations to prosperity.

Fusi's voice resounded:

"However, [Chaos] and [Order] eventually clashed"

Gu Qing Shan pondered and nodded: "[Chaos] wished to eradicate all living beings to extinction, while [Order] wishes for living beings to mature and grow strong, this was an irreconcilable conflict between the two sides"

Fusi continued: "A great battle occurred between [Order] and [Chaos], but in the end, both sides realized that if this continued, there would be no result other than guaranteed mutual destruction"

"Because of this, both factions decided to gather all of their power and imbued it into [Chaos] and [Order] respectively, hoping that living beings would eventually fall to ruin through [Chaos], or head towards prosperity through [Order]"

"Victory and defeat will be left for living beings to decide. While both factions had spent too much of their powers to create [Order] and [Chaos], thus falling into slumber, only reawakening at random intervals, or being contacted from the outside through dreamscapes"

Hearing this, Gu Qing Shan recalled those two titles.

Harbinger of Apocalypse's End.

Slumbering Era's Songster of Night.

He started speaking: "Once [Chaos] had destroyed all living beings, the Apocalypse would also end. At that moment, a Harbinger would appear to awaken the Awaitings of the [Chaos] faction— they will have earned their new lives and gotten their victory"

"Similarly, at the time of the Apocalypse's mass destruction, a Songster of Night would appear to call upon the Awaitings, hoping that they would grant their power. Aiding and guiding living beings to victory against the Apocalypse"

Fusi nodded: “That is how it is”

“Then what about you? Where do you stand?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

Fusi replied: “You first”

Gu Qing Shan casually replied: “I naturally am not willing to allow living beings to die. Everything I strive to do is for the sake of protecting them, and if someone dares to touch the people I protect, I would kill them”

Chapter 1208

“Lady Fusi, I feel that it might not just be just me, but the Earth Creator must have also been a great entity on the side of [Order]. It had been constantly and silently supporting the advancement of civilization, and also aided me in obtaining the twin swords Heaven and Earth”

Gu Qing Shan slowly said.

Even though the Earth Creator was no longer with them, Gu Qing Shan could still remember what the Earth Creator told him at the final moment of the Age of Old:

...

“Normally, the heroes of human history would always feel like they had given their utmost effort in order to finally achieve victory, very few were able to notice my concern and support .”

...

Earlier, Lady Fusi also said——

“[Order] hoped for living beings to grow stronger and retaliate against the Apocalypse.”

From this, I can infer that the Earth Creator belonged to the [Order] faction.

And Lady Fusi was its old friend.

Then, Lady Fusi’s allegiance was very clear.

Fusi observed Gu Qing Shan’s expression before slowly smiling and telling him: “You are very bright, I am—— as you humans put it, an undercover agent”

“You were an undercover agent?” Gu Qing Shan asked in surprise.

“Indeed”

“But your statue was already destroyed...”

Lady Fusi replied: “Even I wouldn’t be able to constantly prevent myself from being noticed by the enemy, so after I accomplished a few things and faked my death to leave [Chaos]”

Gu Qing Shan tried asking: “Then that statue——”

Fusi replied: “The statue was a trigger for a dreamscape. You are currently standing inside my dream, after this dream is over, nothing will have ever happened, and no one would be able to confirm anything”

“This is one of the preparations I left behind in the [Chaos] faction, as I foresaw someone requiring this dreamscape at a certain moment in the future”

“——after all, your current situation is a highly dangerous one” Fusi continued.

Gu Qing Shan was a bit surprised.

Recalling his current situation, he understood what she was trying to say.

“I’m doing this to win against the Soul Shrieker, because as long as it sits on the Deific seat of [Chaos], I wouldn’t be able to kill it” Gu Qing Shan helplessly replied.

Fusi held her scepter straight in front of Gu Qing Shan and said: “Gu Qing Shan, you are the Earth God, one of the Four Pillar Gods of the void, a great entity on the side of [Order]. If you ever reach the Deific seat of [Chaos], you would surely be discovered by the Awaitings from the [Chaos] faction”

“This is a path of infinite danger, but I had already foreseen this from the River of Time”

She chanted an incantation with a whispering voice: “May all the great power of [Order] converge to my dream and exist with me”

Ray after ray of light descended from above, infusing into Fusi's body.

Behind her, various great powers were slowly manifesting their forms.

—-they were the Awaitings of the [Order] faction, awakened by Lady Fusi for this moment.

They all exuded a friendly aura towards Gu Qing Shan.

“This is a critical battle between [Order] and [Chaos]”

Fusi muttered in a low voice:

“One of the four Pillar Gods of the void, Earth God Gu Qing Shan, this moment is the time of the Era of [Chaos]'s descent, as well as the awakening of [Order]. Your identity must definitely not be revealed to our enemies”

From the void, a snow-white sheet of parchment paper appeared and unrolled itself in front of them.

This was a covenant written in the ancient fairy script:

[Stipulated by this secret agreement, sincerely: The Controller of Time, the Unextinguishing Sand, the Lady of Legends, Sovereign of the elemental fairies, the Fairy of Time with the true name Fusi, hereby acknowledges in confidentiality with the master of the Earth Saint Pillar, Gu Qing Shan. All matters regarding the Earth Saint Pillar will be hidden and secured by the Lady until a moment in which the master of the Earth Saint Pillar, Gu Qing Shan, absolves this agreement]

At the bottom of the parchment were two extremely eye-catching bright red fingerprints.

It was the same covenant that Fusi and Gu Qing Shan jointly agreed on when he first inherited the Earth God title.

Fusi looked closely at the parchment and said emotionally: “At this moment, my strength alone is no longer enough to keep your identity a secret”

She suddenly raised her voice and chanted:

“Within the ashes of time, all secrets will eventually come to light. But we shall awaken from our slumber, thus jointly write our names upon the covenant to bear the guarantee of the Earth God’s secret identity”

“With the great power of us slumbering ones as proof, none shall be able to discover the Earth God’s true identity. The Earth God shall climb the Deific seat of [Chaos] with his own mortal flesh and identity as a living being!”

Oom!

The vast power converged at the top of the scepter as a brilliant cluster of light.

Fusi lightly tapped the tip of the scepter against the parchment.

The parchment immediately scattered into countless sprites of light and was absorbed into Gu Qing Shan’s body.

Fusi looked over Gu Qing Shan and smiled: “Your identity has now been hidden, but as you are currently within the bronze palace of [Chaos], you will still need to obtain a [Chaos] seed of power, otherwise you would be exposed”

Gu Qing Shan pondered and said: “Your power is probably not an option”

“Correct” Fusi replied, “My power can only manifest as an [Order] seed of power, so we must resort to other means”

Please support our website and read on [novelbold](#)

She raised her scepter and lightly tapped the void of space.

A diamond-shaped sprite of light, a spherical cluster of a grey dog, and a glowing dark green leaf appeared in front of them.

Lady Fusi explained: “These three dreamscapes of [Chaos] are dreamscapes that I silently collected while taking advantage of unexpected opportunities. Each of them contains a seed of [Chaos] that originated from a dead Awaiting, so they will not draw any suspicions”

Gu Qing Shan asked: “In other words, I will be transported into the dreamscapes, after which I can attempt to inherit the [Chaos] seed of power contained within?”

Lady Fusi replied: “I’ve already cleaned up these three dreamscapes of [Chaos], so there are no trials or obstacles waiting. All you need to do is enter the dreamscape and retrieve its corresponding Dreamscape Soul Artifact to inherit the [Chaos] seed of power within”

Gu Qing Shan looked at the three dreamscapes of [Chaos].

No wonder the War God UI said that any mortal who wishes to obtain such a thing would only be able to do so in their dreams.

—it meant that one had to literally enter a dream.

Fusi continued: “Use your mind to sense and connect with them to see which is the most suitable for you”

Gu Qing Shan carefully sensed each one and smiled at Lady Fusi.

“I’m going”

“We shall be by your side, make sure to win against that Deity of [Chaos]”

“Leave it to me”

Gu Qing Shan lightly tapped the void of space in front of the dark green leaf.

Immediately, he and the green leaf vanished in front of Fusi.

...

A vast forest.

An endlessly lush forest of greenery.

The entire world was filled with trees and no other living beings.

The grass was greatly overgrown all over the ground.

Huge gusts of wind blew in from above, spreading the tall overgrown grass aside to reveal bits and pieces of bones, as well as incomplete dried-up remains.

Gu Qing Shan was standing on top of a great tree silently observing this dreamscape world.

“Lady Fusi said that everything had already been cleaned up...”

He muttered, then his eye was suddenly drawn to a faraway direction.

At the very edge of the world, another great tree that reached the top of the sky stood tall by itself.

— *—seems like that’s the place.*

Gu Qing Shan leapt from the tree and flew towards that bigger tree.

The world was completely empty, other than the wind, plants, and corpses, there were no longer any living entities.

What exactly was the original trial of this [Chaos] dreamscape?

While wondering that, Gu Qing Shan approached the tree closer and closer.

He finally reached the tree's vicinity.

A miraculous voice resounded in his heart.

“Above”

Gu Qing Shan looked up and started to climb towards the top of the tree.

Numerous corpses of all shapes and sizes were hung on the branches of this tree.

—every step he took, he would run into a large number of monster corpses.

Gu Qing Shan completely ignored them all and simply headed towards the top of the tree.

He looked around and quickly found the item he was looking for.

A dark green longbow.

Gu Qing Shan stepped forward and grabbed the longbow.

Lines of glowing text appeared on the War God UI:

[You've obtained a container of Chaos power, a Chaos seed of power, Dreamscape Soul Artifact:]

[Bow of Fallen Souls]

Chapter 1209

In a world different from the sea of trees where Gu Qing Shan was located.

Another dreamscape world.

The entire world was a gigantic city with no borders.

Ye Fei Li descended from above and landed in a gloomy small alley.

The gigantic face of skulls manifested from the void and observed him.

「 Come, subject of [Chaos], World Destroyer, mundane and feeble one, show me what you can truly achieve 」

After saying so, the face disappeared.

A watch with black leather straps and a white clock face appeared from thin air and hovered in front of Ye Fei Li.

Lines of grey text started to manifest from the void of space:

[The dreamscape trial had official begin]

[You've obtained the Dreamscape Soul Artifact: the Watch of Crime, Blank Time of Birthless Emptiness]

[You can do anything you wish in this city]

[The Watch of Crime will rate you step by step in accordance with your performance]

[The lowest rating is 0:00, the highest rating is 12:00]

[You must somehow increase your rating from 0:00 to 12:00 within 12 hours]

[Only by doing this would you obtain this Dreamscape Soul Artifact, as well as the bestowal of the ultimate Chaos seed of power from the chosen Awaiting]

[In order to complete the trial, your powers have been fully released]

[This world's highest power level is three times that of yourself]

[Break a leg]

After the text finished displaying, they soon faded away.

Ye Fei Li reached his hand to take the watch and wore it on his left wrist.

“Using time as a rating system, and there aren’t any other reminders, how unusual. So how exactly do I increase this rating?”

While Ye Fei Li was pondering this, he heard a commotion outside.

The sound of explosions could be heard all over.

A high-pitched police siren.

The sound of gunshots.

Screams.

Pursuit.

And---

A very close sound:

“Give me all your money!”

Ye Fei Li looked towards that direction.

Only to see two burly men with daggers in their hands who had cornered a lanky thin man.

“Hand all of your money over, or I’ll tear you a new one”

“Hurry up!”

The two of them threatened.

The lanky thin man prostrated to the ground and begged: “Big brothers, please I beg—-”

“Cut the crap!” one of the men shouted as he swung his dagger.

The dagger was aimed straight at the thin man’s body.

Clang!

A bright red flash of light.

The burly man’s dagger was sent flying.

The sudden occurrence caused the two of them to divert their gazes towards where the flash of light had come from.

They saw a handsome young man standing on the other side of the street, currently raising his hand to check the time on his watch.

“You tryna play hero? Scram! You were still sucking your momma’s tits when I gained my ability” the other burly man shouted.

He then drew a short sword from his hip

Flames began to drift above his short sword.

A flaming sword.

Sensing the power of this flaming sword, Ye Fei Li finally looked up at the two men.

“A supernatural ability? Even a random mob has one?”

He was very surprised.

At this point, the lanky thin man who was prostrating on the ground suddenly turned into a pile of mud that was absorbed underground and disappeared from the scene.

Ye Fei Li muttered: “An entire population of superhumans?”

He put up one finger.

The finger manifested a bright red streak of light that shot forward.

By the time the burly man lifted his sword, his body had already been chopped to pieces by the red streak of light.

Next to him, his companion was also beheaded.

“How unfortunate, when it comes to utilizing abilities, you guys are still sucking on your mamma’s tits”

Ye Fei Li said apologetically.

He checked his watch again.

The hour and minute hands remained completely still, but the second hand had begun ticking forward.

A line of grey text appeared following it:

[From your performance, you've entered the first minute]

[You've achieved a good beginning]

[Combined with your personal characteristics, the Watch of Crime has bestowed you with the first supernatural ability:]

[Mask of the Clown]

[Causality: When you put this mask on, anyone will consider you to be their ally]

[This ability can be used once per day for 10 minutes at a time]

[While using this ability, you must kill an entity that considers you to be their ally in order to fulfill the Causality Law]

[If you use this ability but do not kill any 'ally' that you deceived, the Mask of the Clown will take away 10 years of your lifespan]

[When you attack an 'ally', the effect of the mask would also fade away]

[Note: The mask's appearance can be changed at will]

Ye Fei Li quickly read through everything and muttered: "That's a bit unimaginable... it's almost like I just entered a hidden quest in a game..."

—-if every minute of this watch represented a single Causality supernatural ability, then this 'Watch of Crime' artifact contains a total of 720 Causality Skills!

What incredible power that would be!

However, this will need to be confirmed.

At this point, the commotion on the street was becoming greater, the sound of intense battle seems to be spreading in every direction.

Ye Fei Li walked to the end of the alley and looked out.

Dozens of men in police uniforms were hurriedly fleeing.

Behind them, 7-8 police cars had already been completely destroyed.

A corpse was thrown out from the bank.

“The Captain of the special forces!”

A policeman exclaimed in fear.

The corpse was literally riddled with bullets, filled to the brim with enough lead to be killed several times over.

A voice shouted from inside the bank: “If you try to attack again, we’re going to kill the rest of them!”

“Runaway as far as you can!”

“Bunch of useless garbage, the money is ours!”

Please support our website and read on novelbold

Loud laughing voices could be heard resounding from the bank.

The policemen lowered their heads and hurriedly ran out of sight.

“Let’s run, this is a personal match between those at the top, we can’t get involved”

“Right, right, right, we’re merely hired to maintain order. This matter is between those VIPs...”

The two policemen whispered to each other in a low voice as they ran across the alley.

Ye Fei Li leaned on the wall and silently listened.

The situation seems complicated...

He looked down to check the Watch of Crime.

The hands on the watch remained still, the second hand had stopped after it made one full revolution.

The minute hand has reached the first tick.

The first minute.

— — *I still need another 719 minutes to earn this Dreamscape Soul Artifact...*

...

[Attention, crooks in the building! You have been surrounded, put down your weapons and surrender yourselves]

The bank robbers peeked out from inside the bank.

On the chaotic main square right in front of the church, several police cars laid all over the ground, having been turned on their heads.

Only a single person stood next to a relatively intact police car.

He was the only living person on the square.

He was holding a loudspeaker and loudly declared through it: [I repeat, crooks in the building! You have been surrounded, put down your weapons and surrender yourselves]

Surrounded?

You're the only person here, what the heck do you mean by surrounded?

The robbers couldn't help but look at the man.

He was relatively unremarkable in every way, except for the mask on his face—

The eyes were blank, it had a stiff expression, a long nose that looked almost like the beak of some bird, as well as a stiff smile.

This was a long-nosed clown mask with a smile that seemed like it was trying to flatter someone, but also like it wasn't trying to flatter anyone at all, simply a blank expression.

All the robbers froze.

"It's an ally, don't shoot!"

"It's an ally"

"That's our guy"

"Ahaha, what a funny guy, he tried to impersonate a cop!"

All of them signaled to one another.

The Clown randomly tossed the loudspeaker behind and swiftly made his way into the bank.

"Did you return from killing those cops?"

The leader of these crooks looked closely at the Clown and smirked.

"Ah, that's right. Those guys knew full well that we had a bigshot backing us and still tried to act like heroes, how annoying" the Clown sighed.

"Bahahaha!" the robbers broke into laughter.

All the bullet-proof glass windows of the bank had already been dismantled, which left the lobby of the bank as a wide empty hall.

The dead bodies of the special forces agents laid all over the hall, soaking the wooden floor red.

The majority of the hostages had already been killed, leaving only a few women with half-torn clothing in the corner, weeping and sobbing.

The Clown looked around, silently memorizing where all the crooks were.

“So, did you get to kill any of those dumbasses?” someone shouted in question.

The Clown appeared dejected.

“Ah, sorry about that, I didn’t kill them. But I can try again”

He sorrowfully said as he grabbed a khopesh from the void of space.

The Forgetting River Soul Flaying Hook!

A faint glow mixed with a streak of blood red light flashed across the entire hall of the bank, then faded away.

All the crooks collapsed at the same time.

The Clown returned to where he stood and crouched down.

Looking at the frightened souls currently hooked by the Forgetting River Soul Flaying Hook, he appeared pleased.

The Clown spoke with a frenzied pleasure: “There, I’ll send you into reincarnation now. Next time you grow up, you can find me again—”

“I guarantee that I’ll do much better next time”

When the Clown was about to activate the Forgetting River Soul Flaying Hook’s power to completely send these souls away, a voice called out.

“Stay your hands!”

A deep male voice resounded.

From the body of the robbers’ leader, a shadow appeared.

The shadow slowly manifested as a clear figure of a man.

It was a middle-aged gentleman in a proper business suit.

“I don’t know who you think you are, but I want you to know, these are my men” the middle-aged man declared.

“Who are you?” the Clown curiously asked.

The middle-aged man appeared surprised, then quickly regained his calm expression.

“If you don’t recognize even me... then this was merely an accident”

“Very well, I will tell you. I am the Supreme Judge of this city of crime”

This time, the Clown was truly curious.

He then waved his khopesh and pointed at the corpses of the crooks and said: "Then, mister Supreme Judge, your way of enforcing the Law is quite the unusual one"

The middle-aged man replied: "In this city, dirty deals, small-time and big-time crimes are constantly being conducted. Such behaviors are being condoned by the ruling brass of this city, and I, as the representative of its law and justice, would never allow these men who abuse their power over the people to have their way"

The Clown asked: "And that's why this operation occurred?"

The middle-aged man smiled and replied: "That's right. In truth, they are also spreading justice, so please let them go, consider it doing me a favor"

The Clown looked at the bodies of the dead special forces agents, then pointed his khopesh at the dead hostages and asked with a clearly confused tone: "You call that spreading justice?"

The middle-aged man replied: "For the sake of a better tomorrow, sacrifices are always necessary"

The Clown slowly raised the Forgetting River Soul Flaying Hook.

Oom!

The khopesh vibrated.

A faint glow broke apart the void of space, displaying an endless great river.

The souls of the crooks were all sucked into the river, falling directly into its water before they were washed towards Hell.

The glow quickly pulled back.

All the supernatural phenomena disappeared.

“Very well, I can see that you’re trying to offend me, trying to go against the only justice in this city” the middle-aged man said with a dark expression.

The Clown walked up to the middle-aged man, wiped his khopesh on the crook leader’s body, examined it carefully for any blemishes before casually putting it on his back again.

“Sorry, mister Supreme Judge. Even if you weren’t peddling your bullshit sense of justice, I wouldn’t have heeded your demands”

The Clown said with an apologetic tone: “Because I represent the forces of evil, only by killing would I feel happy”

As he declared so, the watch in his wrist started moving, both the second and the minute hand quickly started spinning.

Chapter 1210

“I represent the law of this city, the number one at the very top of the Supreme Court”

“Clown, I don’t care who the one behind you might be, but I can guarantee that you will regret this”

After stating this, the middle-aged man’s figure slowly faded away.

He disappeared from the corpse.

The Clown seemed like he still hadn’t fully regained his senses as he hummed a tune while walking towards a secluded place in the bank.

There was a city map here.

“Ding ding ding, found you”

The Clown dipped his finger into a pool of blood on the ground and likely traced a mark at a certain corner of the map.

It was the address of the city court's Supreme Judge.

"A debt of blood must be paid by blood—- although it's not my debt, I'm still the collector"

The Clown muttered to himself and checked the Watch of Crime at his wrist.

Time has moved forward by 7 minutes.

A line of grey text appeared in the void of space following that:

[From your performance, you've entered the eighth minute]

[You may choose to receive seven different supernatural abilities, each at the same level as the Mask of the Clown]

[You may also choose to exchange these seven minutes all at once to obtain a more powerful random ability]

[Please make your choice]

The Clown pondered.

In this world, the most powerful person is three times as strong as I am, but I only have 12 hours.

And I'm not Zhang Ying Hao.

Someone like Zhang Ying Hao can use every last bit of power and tool at his disposal to their extreme in order to kill a certain target.

That is the hitman's style.

—-—while my style of fighting is usually more suitable for using means that others could not predict in order to resolve a problem.

With that in mind, the Clown made his decision.

“I choose to exchange seven minutes all at once to obtain a more powerful random ability”

He silently informed the Watch of Crime in his mind.

Following his choice, new lines of grey text appeared:

[In consideration of your unique characteristics, the Watch of Crime has bestowed upon you the second supernatural ability:]

[A Wonderful Echo of Stylistic Art]

...

Nightfall.

The bell tower in front of the Supreme Court.

The Clown stood motionlessly.

Behind him, several beautiful women were gradually having their meal as they sat.

“You don’t have to follow me” the Clown said without turning around.

One of them replied: “It can’t be helped, we’ve been swept into a battle between VIPs, there’s no way we would be able to escape”

Another woman followed up: “I’m just a normal bank teller, so I should have already died earlier. Never did I think I’d become the witness of a VIP’s crime— even if I stay away from you, I’ll eventually be silenced either way”

The Clown didn’t reply.

He simply stared closely at the large structure under the shroud of night.

The women exchanged glances.

One particularly beautiful woman fearfully said: "Sir, why don't you take us with you and escape? With your strength, you'd surely be able to leave the range of the Supreme Court's influence and begin anew"

"Escape?"

The Clown repeated that word.

He regained his senses, cleared his throat, then said: "Which one of you knows what the Supreme Court actually does?"

"You don't even know that?" one of the women exclaimed in shock.

"May I have the honor of hearing your explanation then?" the Clown grandly gestured.

For some reason, the woman felt certain unprecedented emotion from seeing the Clown's over-the-top performance.

She took a deep breath, then explained: "The Supreme Court, the Council, and the Army are the three most powerful forces in this city. They rule above the citizens and hold the right to kill within this era where Apocalypses descend one after another. They are always competing against one another without any regard for the survival of us normal people"

The Clown put up one hand like a concert director.

"I can see that each of you have a supernatural ability, why didn't you join one of these three forces?"

The women smiled bitterly.

“My ability is simply rapid calculation speed; my combat prowess isn’t on par with their requirements”

“My ability is a flexible boneless body, but I’m afraid of blood, so I’m not suitable to join them as a soldier”.

“...”

The women each stated their ability, then quickly returned to the original topic.

“Sir, you’ve offended a VIP from the Supreme Court, please bring us with you and flee”

“Please don’t worry, we’ll listen to everything you say”

“We just want to live”

The Clown listened and silently stared at the women’s expressions.

He could see the instinct to survive reflected in their eyes.

The Clown cleared his throat and asked:

Please support our website and read on novelbold

“Is the enemy powerful?”

The women all nodded.

The Clown clapped his hands happily: “That’s perfect. I have a senior who once taught me how to deal with this exact situation”

“How would you deal with it?” one of the women tried asking.

The Clown replied: "Against a more powerful enemy, you only need to not give him the chance to act"

The Clown pulled a conductor baton out of nowhere, lightly tapped it on the rocky surface of the bell tower, and continued monologuing:

"This situation reminds me of something I heard in the past. Excuse me for paying my past a short visit—"

"There are too many in this world who do not wear a mask, yet conceal themselves in other ways, but I wear my mask in order to expand my soul and become my real self"

"In this city of crimes, I shall utter a voice of my own"

"That is—"

The Clown pointed at the Supreme Court building with his baton.

Boom!!!

Black fog and intense flames erupted.

A resounding sound of numerous explosions.

The ground was continuously shaken by the impact.

The wind sharply howled.

"All crimes in this world should be eradicated, as dictated by the law of karma, as well as my own contributing echo"

"—A Wonderful Echo of Stylistic Art!"

"Ahahahahaha!"

The Clown laughed maniacally.

The watch on his wrist was moving at a rapid pace.

The grand and towering Supreme Court quickly collapsed, reduced to rubble.

A figure flew out of the ruined structure, trying to escape, only to be caught by the Clown from afar and brought back to the bell tower.

Thud!

The figure was thrown down from the air, desperately struggling to stand as he fell.

The Clown landed, grabbed the other party's face and whispered: "Mister Supreme Judge, from this moment onward, I declare you relieved of all of your duties, take a trip to Huang Quan and have some time off"

The man on the ground was bleeding all over, having lost an arm from the explosion, he breathed heavily: "Re...release me, I am——"

"He's one of my men"

A solemn male voice resounded in the sky.

The Clown looked up.

Only to see an old man with a grey beard wearing a proper business suit as well as a solemn expression while he stood hovering in the sky.

"Now who the hell are you?" the Clown asked without changing his expression.

—three times.

This old man is three times as strong as I am.

The Clown was quickly considering the trend of the battle.

The old man looked down on him and casually answered: “I am the manager of this place, the great Awaiting’s servant, and the one you’re trying to kill is my son”

The Clown stood up and clapped his hand.

A khopesh manifested from the void of space, propping right below the Supreme Judge’s neck.

“Feel free to elaborate” the Clown replied.

The old man flashed a mocking smile and said: “You still don’t get it? Your trial is being conducted on my turf. Have you thought carefully about what would happen if you touched my son?”

“Release my son, then settle down and do whatever it is you’re supposed to do”

“Keep well in mind, this isn’t the place for you to act as you pleased”

The Clown stood motionlessly.

The old man scowled and was about to say something else.

The Clown suddenly jumped, stepped to the Supreme Judge’s left side, and shouted: “Excuse me, the one you’re trying to kill is my mount— ah wait, you’re still trying to kill him? Alright, he’s actually my disciple— ah wait, you still insist on killing him? I’ll tell the truth, he’s actually my adopted son”

After spouting those lines, he then jumped to the Supreme Judge’s right side, displaying a shocked and wary expression while fearfully saying: “Ah, so he wasn’t an enemy, this is merely a misunderstanding, you can take him away”

“Goodbye”

“Goodbye”

After that little act, the Clown once again sat down in front of the Supreme Judge and held the khopesh tightly.

“Lookie lookie”

The Clown chuckled.

The khopesh swung upwards.

The Supreme Judge’s head was directly cut off and held in his hand.

“Bahahaha, did you really think I’d actually let your son go?”

The Clown laughter resounded.

“That ending is too boring, so I’ve given you a much darker ending instead”

The Clown held up the head as if showing it off, then laughed hysterically as if he couldn’t hold himself back

“Ahahaha, wasn’t it exciting? Wasn’t that riveting!?”

Following this declaration, the second hand and minute hand on his Watch of Crime started spinning wildly.

Chapter 1211

The forest world.

Gu Qing Shan reached out to hold the dark green longbow.

Lines of glowing text appeared on the War God UI:

[You've obtained the Bow of Fallen Souls]

[This Dreamscape Soul Artifact is powerful and requires the corresponding great level of strength in order to use]

[With your current strength, while using this bow, you'll obtain the following supernatural abilities:]

[Withering: Any object that you hit with this bow will quickly deteriorate, wither, and become destructible]

[Corroding Essence: Any living being that you hit with this bow will have their body quickly corroded, injuries caused by this cannot be stopped except by completely amputating the affected body part]

[Attention: Only after your personal strength had grown stronger once more would you be able to exert more powerful abilities from this Dreamscape Soul Artifact]

A second later, a figure appeared from within the longbow.

Lady Fusi.

She wielded her staff and unleashed hundreds of illusory images.

Each of them displayed different but similarly arduous battles.

In this world, Gu Qing Shan had to go through countless trials and triumph against countless powerful enemies in order to finally obtain this Dreamscape Soul Artifact—

The Bow of Fallen Souls.

“We used numerous spells and techniques in order to fabricate the process of your trial. This will be able to deceive the enemy's investigation— as long as your opponent's display isn't too extraordinary, it wouldn't an exaggeration for you to instantly win the favor of [Chaos]”

Recalling something, Fusi added: “Don't worry, I've also pulled a little trick to guide your opponent onto an incorrect path”

“What would happen to it?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

“They will probably choose an incomplete statue, one whose corresponding Awaiting is already gone” Lady Fusi replied.

“How pitiable indeed” Gu Qing Shan commented.

He suddenly paused.

“What’s the matter?” Lady Fusi asked.

“I want to confirm something. In the past, because the Awaitings of both the [Order] faction and the [Chaos] faction did not want mutually assured destruction, they created [Order] and [Chaos]; the results of which was that they spent all of their powers and fell into a deep slumber, is that correct?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

“Indeed” Lady Fusi replied.

Gu Qing Shan blinked, then slowly asked: “Lady Fusi, there is at least one Awaiting in the [Chaos] faction with your same strength, I assume?”

Lady Fusi replied: “Naturally, there is one Awaiting with the relative same unique characteristics and abilities”

Gu Qing Shan looked down at the dark green bow in his hand and silently said in his mind: “War God UI, check this bow again, please make sure that all of its current characteristics are on display”

Lines of glowing text manifested on the War God UI again, displaying the previous appraisal.

“There aren’t any issues... strange” Gu Qing Shan muttered.

He kept feeling like something was off.

As if he was walking through a silent ravine by himself, yet could feel the gaze of countless people hiding in the darkness, attempting something.

This wasn't related to his spirit sense, it was purely his instincts as a soldier— or rather, a field commander who oversaw the entire battlefield.

Everything went too smoothly.

Would a war of countless years simply head to its end so smoothly without issues?

Indeed, this was the heart's desire of everyone, but a rational soldier would never allow himself to ignore the hidden currents hidden below the calm surface purely out of his own desires.

The world isn't that simple.

Even the fight of a single person to change their own fate would consist of countless hardships up until the very end, let alone this was a war to determine the fate of countless living beings, all the Awaitings, as well as the outcome of the Apocalypses themselves?

If something proceeded so smoothly under such circumstances, there could only be a single possibility.

—something wasn't taken into consideration.

Gu Qing Shan was unable to come up with anything, so his expression grew increasingly more solemn.

Lady Fusi noticed the change in his expression and tried asking: "Gu Qing Shan, this is a decisive moment for the survival of [Order], why do I see hesitation and uncertainty on your expression?"

Gu Qing Shan replied: "It's nothing, I'm just trying to think from another perspective— Lady Fusi, have any of your preparations up until now gotten caught on any snags? Or have any of them been nearly discovered by the enemy?"

Lady Fusi pondered briefly before answering: "None at all"

She suddenly realized what he was asking as her expression turned solemn as well: “Do you think there might be a trap?”

Gu Qing Shan replied: “I don’t have any proof, I simply feel like we should be a bit cautious—— the difference between us and our enemy isn’t terribly vast, which means... if you can sabotage something this important within the [Chaos] faction, the enemy would be able to similarly sabotage something of similar importance within the [Order] faction”

Lady Fusi frowned.

She used her scepter to tap Gu Qing Shan.

Countless sprites of light manifested from Gu Qing Shan’s body to reform the sheet of parchment paper from before.

“There are no issues, every keeper of secrets had unconditionally bestowed their power to guarantee your identity would not be discovered” she stated.

Gu Qing Shan pondered and said: “I want to know, what kind of powers did the person from the [Chaos] faction with the relative same unique characteristics and abilities as you possessed?”

Lady Fusi replied: “He was the seer of [Chaos], like me, he is able to travel through the timeline and make certain predictions of things that would occur in the future”

“In other words, that Awaiting might be capable of witnessing this meeting between you and I?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

“No, he would not attempt to touch any parts of Space-Time that I had used my power to conceal—— that would expend too much of his power, causing him to fall into slumber. Furthermore, we are evenly matched” Lady Fusi replied.

Gu Qing Shan immediately said: “Then, you would similarly not be able to see any parts of Space-Time that he had used his powers to conceal?”

Lady Fusi replied: "If I use everything I have, I can. But I would fall into complete slumber afterward due to expending all of my powers"

Gu Qing Shan said: "Then, please examine if there have been any moments in time related to him and yourself that he had concealed"

Lady Fusi observed Gu Qing Shan closely and commented: "Earth God, your level of caution has left me quite the profound impression"

"Every step in war requires extreme discretion at the beginning, otherwise trillions of living beings would be heading to their deaths" Gu Qing Shan replied.

"But the River of Time is too vast, even if I expend all of my powers, it would be impossible to observe every single thing he had ever done" Lady Fusi said.

She raised three fingers.

"I can only choose three points in time to examine whether or not he had attempted any sabotage"

"Furthermore, after doing so, I would fall into complete slumber like the other Awaitings, unable to awaken or help you for a very long time"

"We must accurately pinpoint the point in time where he had attempted to sabotage, otherwise you will have an unknown trap by yourself, while we would be helpless to aid you"

Please support our website and read on novelbold

Gu Qing Shan fell silent.

—-this was truly a gamble with nearly no chance of winning.

He pondered: "If we are able to correctly guess the moment that he made the sabotage from the very first attempt, would you still have enough power to fight with me?"

“I will. Investigating the second time will cost all of my current expendable power while attempting it a third time will cost me a heavy price” Lady Fusi replied.

Gu Qing Shan muttered to himself: “If you cannot participate in battle, our chances of winning would greatly decrease— in other words, we need to correctly guess what and where he attempted something from the very first time”

He fell into deep thought.

If an unknown enemy were to arrange an unknown trap at an unknown time.

What time would that be?

What would they attempt?

With so many periods in time to select, how could I determine that?

There’s only a single chance without any room for error, what should I do to reach the truth?

Anyone would feel helpless in front of such a problem.

—this was truly an impossible calculation.

Lady Fusi also thought of that and sighed: “You made very plausible assumptions regarding the tactics and powers of both our factions. I’ve been carefully hiding myself for countless years, always watching out for any irregularities in Space-Time, afraid that he might have arranged something, but never have I found anything worthy of note”

“You mean, you’ve always been keeping an eye out against him?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

“Indeed, since he has very similar abilities to myself, I would naturally need to guard myself from him discovering my movements” Lady Fusi replied.

“You’ve never found anything irregularities— then, we can first make an assumption that if he attempted to arrange anything at all, he would also not be willing to be discovered, so—”

Gu Qing Shan paused briefly before continuing: “He must have finished his arrangements before you went into hiding”

Lady Fusi shook her head: “There was at least a period of 100 million years before I went into hiding, that would still be too vast to determine if he attempted to sabotage anything, or when he did so”

“Do you understand him well?” Gu Qing Shan then asked.

“No, I’ve only ever fought against him once. I only know that he has similar abilities to me, but not much about him in particular” Lady Fusi replied.

This is too difficult, there would be no way to come up with a solution like this.

She silently thought.

Gu Qing Shan muttered: “The two of you are evenly matched...”

“If I were him, I would also make sure to carefully avoid you before I consider attempting anything”

“——Both of you were wary of one another”

“What he attempted would definitely be related to the current Apotheotic Combat, as this is a pivotal moment that will decide whether or not the Era of [Chaos] fully manifests, and whether or not [Order] is completely destroyed”

“Because of this, countless years ago, he would have made his arrangements at a moment that you could not discover”

Lady Fusi said: “There are too many things that he could have attempted to do—— this is like trying to prevent a particular robber before they even think about robbing you, I couldn’t possibly understand what he could be thinking”

Gu Qing Shan shook his head: “In an occasion like this, if all of your movements were used as a basis, the things he can actually do are definitely traceable”

“From a result-oriented point of view, to ensure the manifestation of the Era of [Chaos], the winner of the Apotheotic Combat must be a true heir of [Chaos], and not someone who attempts to kill the founding Deity of [Chaos] like myself”

“They would want to prevent this... unless...”

Lady Fusi suddenly felt herself becoming nervous and immediately asked: “Unless what?”

“Unless the results had already been predetermined since a very long time ago” Gu Qing Shan replied.

Lady Fusi replied: “But across such a long period of time, there would be too many variables. It’s simply impossible to accurately make sure that a certain occurrence millions of years in the future would begin, progress, and end exactly as one wished— even us Awaitings cannot possibly achieve such a feat”

“No”

Gu Qing Shan stated.

His mind was speeding through, pondering the method to resolve this current dilemma.

“The founding Deity of the Era of [Chaos] gains the support of the entire Era, which means it would be impossible for them to die. Only by triggering the Apotheotic Combat would one be able to usurp the Deific Authority and eliminate the founding Deity”

“And the conditions for triggering the Apotheotic Combat was to offer an [Order] as a sacrifice to the Era of [Chaos]— Lady Fusi, are there any issues with this?”

Lady Fusi confirmed: “There are no issues, that was indeed the case”

Gu Qing Shan continued: “In that case, there are several points at which the other party could have actively sabotaged”

“The first are those who participated in the Apotheotic Combat— I trust my comrades because I understand them well. Furthermore, even if he tried to sabotage them, I would still be able to resolve any issues with them thanks to my strength”

Lady Fusi nodded in agreement: “I’ve examined your comrades and confirmed that there are no issues with them”

After a short pause, Gu Qing Shan continued: “Then, there’s only one other thing that the enemy could have sabotaged and arranged since millions of years ago”

“What would that be?”

“[Order], the [Order] that I sacrificed”

Gu Qing Shan recalled how he sacrificed the [Demon King Order].

From beginning to end, this [Order] didn’t try to refuse or retaliate in any way.

—with how sly this [Order] was, that shouldn’t have been its reaction.

Gu Qing Shan went through his thoughts several times before confirming: “This is the only place where the enemy might be able to overturn the situation, as well as the only place they could have sabotaged that would ultimately decide the outcome of the Apotheotic Combat”

“Just as you, Lady Fusi, had infiltrated the bronze palace as a covert agent, silently altering the outcome of the trials within, your old enemy could have done the same”

Gu Qing Shan took a deep breath and concluded: “I believe that countless years ago, he had already sabotaged [Worlds Apocalypse Online: Demon King Order]”

Lady Fusi couldn’t help but feel a sense of respect towards him.

This was the first time she had ever felt a genuine sense of respect towards an entity vastly weaker than herself.

She said: “According to your conjecture, we will need to return to the moment of the [Demon King Order]’s conception— because after an [Order] had been created, no one would ever be able to sabotage it any longer”

“This is the only answer I can think of” Gu Qing Shan replied.

“Then let us go!”

Lady Fusi wielded her scepter and broke through the void of space.

The two of them entered the void and hovered above.

Right below them was a glittering great river.

Lady Fusi sternly reminded him: “We will now travel against the flow back to trillions of years ago, back to the point when [Worlds Apocalypse Online: Demon King Order] was created. Gu Qing Shan, definitely do not let go of my hand, otherwise, you will be immediately erased by the Laws of time due to traveling too far back in time”

“I understand, Lady Fusi”

Chapter 1212

The River of Time.

Shining, eternal.

Countless eons of history, trillions of living beings, everything traveled only their own short journey within this endlessly lengthy river, then ultimately disappeared.

Fusi held onto Gu Qing Shan as they travelled against the flow of this great river.

To return to that moment from countless years ago, the distance that needed to be travelled was so great that Gu Qing Shan had more time to ponder on this entire matter.

At a certain point.

“Lady Fusi, what would happen if the [Demon King Order] evolved to its final state?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

“Didn’t you already experience such a thing?”

While moving against the surging flow of time, she replied.

Gu Qing Shan doubtfully answered: “Yes, the [Demon King Order] wanted to use my Soul Points to summon the Demon King into the world— what exactly is the entity called ‘Demon King’?”

Lady Fusi replied: “The [Demon King Order] would have used your Soul Points as a trigger and combine it with the Prayers it had accumulated over the countless years of its existence to create a unique entity”

“Create?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

“Indeed, it was a peerless creation technique that was created by the entire combined power of our [Order] faction”

Lady Fusi was full of emotions: “The entity created would attach itself to the summoner, capable of altering everything in reality while ignoring the restraints of Causality and every other Law in existence!”

Gu Qing Shan was shocked and couldn’t help but ask: “With such power, how would you not be able to get rid of the [Chaos] faction? Or even the Apocalypse itself?”

“This would certainly be the most powerful weapon that our [Order] faction had ever created, unfortunately...” Lady Fusi sighed in dejection: “It had a shortcoming that simply could not be remedied— we had calculated at the time, if the [Demon King Order] was to stay constantly active for 10 trillion years, constantly accumulating the Prayers of all of its carriers, at most it would only allow the entity called ‘Demon King’ to exist for 10 seconds”

10 seconds!

No matter how powerful of a force this was, it would exist for too little time.

—-but the number of Apocalypse outside the Reality gate was ‘infinite’.

Using 10 seconds to fight against ‘infinite’, the only outcome would be a failure.

Gu Qing Shan pondered briefly and understood.

The [Chaos] faction also desired this power, so the enemy who was of similar strength to Lady Fusi had silently sabotaged the [Demon King Order].

—this would eventually lead to the Era of [Chaos] fully manifesting after 10 trillion years, while the [Order] faction would be rendered thoroughly powerless.

At this point, Lady Fusi suddenly wielded her scepter and lightly chanted the incantation:

“Time, you are my advocate, please raise your light and obscure all of our actions”

A small stream of time left the river, manifesting into a thin white line that circled the two of them.

“Be careful, we’re going to arrive soon” Lady Fusi told him.

Gu Qing Shan gladly replied: “I understand”

Wielding her scepter in one hand while holding onto him with the other, Lady Fusi headed towards a certain part of the River of Time.

She strongly thrust forward with her scepter.

The shining great river parted ways.

The blurred figures and images within the river slowly became clear in front of their eyes.

A secret room.

Within this secret room, numerous entities wearing black robes had gathered, continuously moving around a black flame several meters in height.

The faces of these entities had been obscured, completely concealing their figures, with only the numerous incantations they were uttering to be audible.

As they continued to chant, the black flame gradually became brighter and more blinding.

At a certain point, they stopped.

The chanting also ceased.

From a certain robed figure, a voice spoke: "I have bestowed it 1,963 kinds of combat abilities"

Another voice spoke: "I've added 99,000 kinds of equipment and combination forging methods"

"I've bestowed it the rules of advancement, as well as a module to select new power"

"Related to summoning techniques, I've given 7,491 kinds"

"The Prayers collecting Dreamscape Soul Artifact has been prepared"

"..."

Each of them stated their contributions.

Lady Fusi and Gu Qing Shan stood in a secluded corner as they silently watched this.

After a while, Gu Qing Shan suddenly realized.

Countless years ago, these unimaginable powerful entities were wracking their minds to think of a way to fight the Apocalypse.

These pioneers, it was them who created [Order]

—and this was the process of how [Worlds Apocalypse Online: Demon King Order] was created.

How unimaginable that I've travelled so far back in time in order to witness the process of [Order]'s creation!

Gu Qing Shan felt an indescribable emotion rising from his heart.

“Can't they see us?” Gu Qing Shan asked in a whisper.

Lady Fusi replied: “Naturally, there are some who recognize Space-Time magic and would be able to discover us, look——”

An entity in a black robe slowly turned around and walked in front of them.

A familiar voice questioned:

“Arrivals from the future time, who exactly are you?”

Both sides were now close enough for Gu Qing Shan to see her appearance.

It was Lady Fusi.

This was her during her youth, despite a hint of immaturity that she carried, she still emanated peerless power and solemnity.

Gu Qing Shan observed the other party, then looked back at Lady Fusi who was holding onto him and felt shocked.

“No need to be surprised. The Law of Time would erase two of the same entities who exist at the same point in time because it would otherwise cause Space-Time to become chaotic and collapse”

“But since I am able to calm the chaos of Space-Time, I can naturally meet myself”

Saying so, Lady Fusi removed a hairpin from her head, chanted a short incantation, and handed it to her other-self.

The younger Fusi received and examined it for a bit before returning it.

“So it truly is myself from 10 trillion years later, is there anything you wish to tell me in the present?” she asked.

“I cannot say, but I need your power as reinforcement to probe for a certain thing” Lady Fusi shook her head and answered.

The younger Fusi nodded and said emotionally: “Then it seems the situation had gotten very serious”

She raised both hands and lightly chanted: “May great power of time flow like a waterfall, filling your body and spirit”

The thin white line around Fusi and Gu Qing Shan’s bodies suddenly grew bigger, manifesting as a milky white light that enveloped them both.

Another cluster of blinding light appeared from the younger Fusi’s hand and flew into Lady Fusi’s hand.

“This is my strongest clairvoyance technique” the younger Fusi said.

“I naturally know that” Lady Fusi replied.

Gu Qing Shan was already completely shocked.

She is literally helping herself?

Lady Fusi glanced at him, saw that he was staring at her younger self, and told him – apparently misunderstanding something: “The more power of Time I accumulate, the younger I would appear; verse-wise, I would appear older”

While she explained, her younger self had already returned to the other Awaitings.

She was telling the others something.

Please support our website and read on [novelbold](#)

—several Awaitings were listening to her and turned their gazes towards this corner, then turned back after she finished explaining.

“They are those who are currently protecting your secret on the scroll, so they can be trusted” Lady Fusi explained.

Gu Qing Shan continued: “And since you are currently at the venue of the [Order]’s creation, your evenly-matched opponent would not appear just yet”

“Indeed, we will need to wait for a bit” Lady Fusi replied.

The two of them silently stood in the corner, listening to the others’ conversations.

After a while.

An earth-shaking voice declared from outside:

“You bastards of the [Order] faction, come out and receive your deaths!”

Gu Qing Shan turned to Lady Fusi.

“Ah, I remember now, when the [Demon King Order] was completed, the [Chaos] faction arrived and declared a battle against us”

Lady Fusi appeared nostalgic and continued: “At the time, we assumed that they were jealous of the Demon King power we had created— although it would only exist for 10 seconds, it had already surpassed their imagination”

While she told him, the Awaitings from the [Order] faction had already left the secret room in groups.

Since the [Chaos] faction had come to fight, they couldn't help but receive it.

The younger Fusi moved with her companions towards the secluded corner of the secret room and looked at the two of them.

“Do you need me to do anything?” the younger Fusi asked.

“No need, go on, do not mess with the timeline and history of 10 trillion years” Lady Fusi replied.

The younger Fusi nodded and was about to leave with her companions.

“Tsk”

A cold snort resounded.

Among her companions, another entity who was also wearing a black robe approached them.

He walked up to Gu Qing Shan.

「 Youngster, the few dragons that you killed 10 trillion years later are all garbage that deserves to be killed, so I'll disregard them 」

「 However—— how could you use the power of the dragon race that way, that isn't how you use it at all! 」

「 It's very shameful to run your mouth like that, do you understand? 」

He was scolding Gu Qing Shan without giving him time to speak, obviously quite furious.

Gu Qing Shan looked at this Awaiting.

He had a pair of golden vertical irises.

His face itself was covered in scales that naturally formed complicated mystical runes.

His presence was completely different from the others.

—-he was considerably more powerful.

“Your grace, please do not be angry. In the lull of survival, I could only use whatever power available to myself” Gu Qing Shan had to explain himself.

The other party coldly glared at Gu Qing Shan, then suddenly reached out a finger clad in a milky white glow and tapped Gu Qing Shan's forehead.

「 Remember, this is the true power of the dragon race 」

Saying so, he immediately left.

The younger Fusi watched as he left, then turned back to Gu Qing Shan.

“It's ok, he's the Thousand Dragon Ancestor. He was definitely providing you some sort of aid, don't worry” she lightly told him.

Lady Fusi urged them: “Alright, don’t linger for too long, you should quickly leave before the history of 10 trillion years is altered, it could cause unimaginable consequences”

The younger Fusi exchanged glances with her companions, nodded, then left.

Eventually, all the Awaitings left, leaving the black flame silently hovering by itself.

The secret room quickly became peaceful again.

Only Fusi and Gu Qing Shan silently stood in the corner.

“If your guess was correct, that event should occur very soon” Lady Fusi said.

“I’m not really sure. But since this was the only place they could have sabotaged, and they had even used so many people to draw everyone in the secret room away, I think that event will surely occur very soon” Gu Qing Shan replied.

After saying so, his gaze turned to the void of space.

Lines of glowing text appeared on the War God UI:

[You’ve received the teachings of the Thousand Dragon Ancestor]

[Your Azure Dragon Shadow Hex – Binding is evolving]

[The Azure Dragon Origin Hex is being conceived]

[You will soon obtain the true power of the dragon race]

Gu Qing Shan didn’t have time to observe any further.

——he suddenly felt Lady Fusi’s hand tightening on his shoulder.

“I am the Unextinguishing Sands of Time, hereby calling upon the most profound power of Time”

“All time, you are my closest friends, please break through the false concealment of past entities, as well as the illusions that did not exist, show me the truth and secret hidden within the deepest recesses of Time”

Lady Fusi quickly chanted and crushed the cluster of light in her hand.

Gu Qing Shan suddenly looked up.

The world was fading away from their visions.

Emptiness.

After emptiness, the entire world abruptly manifested itself again.

Nothing had changed, and no abnormalities occurred.

“Let us observe the outcome” Lady Fusi said.

The two of them silently stood still.

Gu Qing Shan didn't have the mind to read the notifications regarding the dragon race's power either.

Because this was the most important moment!

One breath.

Two breaths.

Three breaths.

...

The time they waited gradually accumulated.

Nothing occurred at all.

Eventually, even Gu Qing Shan's own confidence was wavering.

Lady Fusi sighed, about to say something.

All of a sudden, a faint figure descended from above, silently landing within the secret room.

The figure circled around the black flames a few times and muttered:

“So this is the [Demon King Order]? How truly unexpected for them to create such an [Order]”

Gu Qing Shan and Lady Fusi exchanged glances.

—–the enemy truly did arrive.

10 trillion years ago, that entity from the [Chaos] faction truly did sabotage the [Demon King Order] at this exact moment.

Gu Qing Shan's conjecture wasn't wrong!

Chapter 1213

Gu Qing Shan and Lady Fusi instinctively held their breaths.

Both of them silently observed that figure.

“That is him” Lady Fusi confirmed.

Gu Qing Shan nodded.

The figure circled around the black flames several times while speaking:

“It is exactly as the information said... such a powerful [Order] is like a canna flower blooming in a storm, although it can display a ray of light within the endless darkness of the Apocalypse, a mere 10 seconds cannot possibly win against the Apocalypse, it can only——”

His tone became full of killing intent: “At a certain moment in the future, prevent the full manifestation of the Era of [Chaos], and I shall alter that future”

The sound of battle resounded from outside.

The people of both factions were clashing against one another!

The person briefly listed, then took out a small brownish-grey bag from his chest.

“There’s not much time, fortunately, we had done everything we could to make this preparation”

While saying that, he opened the small bag and tossed a handful of dark golden fine sand into the black flames.

Oom!

The black flames suddenly rose up and manifested a faint humanoid figure.

It spoke with a puzzled tone: [Who was it, who granted me another kind of power?]

After being mixed with that dark golden fine sand, the humanoid figure manifested by the flames was gradually becoming more unstable.

Numerous special materials and substances appeared from its body, silently floating in the air as they gave off a glorious light.

The figure quickly muttered: "I have granted you the emotions of humanity. From now on, you shall have deceitful language; a gloomy and cold timid personality; malicious and lacking in emotions; up until the moment of your sacrifice, at which you shall embrace the Era of [Chaos] and become the final power for the Era to descend!"

"From now on, you shall accept your completely new self, and a completely new mission!"

The flame abruptly trembled, then completely retracted; the humanoid figure also returned to stability.

[I—understand—]

The humanoid figure said.

The other figure stated: "Keep well in mind, you shall fight against [Chaos], only when you cannot win shall you flee as far as possible from it, up until a day when you are brought to place called the world of the Spire"

[And then?] the humanoid figure asked.

"Embrace the Era of [Chaos], after sensing the presence I left, it will temporarily not consume you"

The figure continued: "Once the Apotheotic Combat is over, the 'Harbinger of Apocalypse' End' will appear. You must release all of your Prayers and imbue her with it"

"The 10 trillion years of Prayers would've accumulated would overwhelm her, forcing her to call out to us"

"We shall consume those Prayers and return to our peak states, thus reawakening"

[Understood—] the humanoid figure replied.

Gu Qing Shan's gaze became focused.

So that was it.

So that was the crucial mission that Ye Ru Xi carried, acting as the catalyst to imbue the Awaitings from the [Chaos] faction with the Prayers of 10 trillion years.

No wonder the Era of [Chaos] regarded her with such importance, sparing no price to protect her.

The [Demon King Order], the Era of [Chaos], the Apotheotic Combat, the bronze palace of [Chaos].

Everything had already been predetermined, as soon as the Apotheotic Combat ends, Ye Ru Xi will be brought back to the world of the Spire, and the preparations will be triggered.

At that time, not only would the Era of [Chaos] fully manifest, but these Awaitings from the [Chaos] faction would also be thoroughly awakened!

Regardless of who becomes the founding Deity of [Chaos], they would still be powerless to stop the Awaitings of the [Chaos] faction.

The [Chaos] faction would emerge triumphant within this 10-trillion-year-war.

They will destroy every world, eliminate every living being, and bring about desolation to all—

Until the Apocalypse ultimately ends.

These Awaitings...

Gu Qing Shan clenched his fist tightly, forcing himself to control his killing intent.

After finishing his entrustment, the figure nodded with a pleased attitude.

His gaze turned to the void of space, staring at the numerous precious treasures that appeared from within the [Order].

—all of them were Dreamscape Soul Artifacts, personal artifacts of the Awaitings.

“These Soul Artifacts are the core from the side of [Order], I naturally cannot take them out, otherwise they will notice”

He muttered, then took out a rectangular box.

The treasures that flew out were placed within and sealed by dozens of Secret Arts, rendering them unable to be sensed any longer.

The figure silently listened to the commotion outside and mockingly said:

“We spent an untold amount of time to prepare a total of 3000 concealment Secret Arts, I’d like to see you try and find them again”

Please support our website and read on novelbold

He strolled towards a certain corner, crouched down, then placed the rectangular box on the ground.

The rectangular box quickly faded away and sank into the ground, completely vanishing from sight.

“People from the side of [Order]”

“You shall continue to come here day by day, continuously creating your [Orders], but never will you find out that everything you’re doing would become a stepping stone for [Chaos]”

“This is my silent insult—— one that will follow you each and every day up until the moment of the Era of [Chaos]’s descent”

Saying so, that figure triumphantly chuckled, then slowly faded into the void of space and disappeared from the secret room.

One breath’s worth of time later.

“Has he left?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

“He has” Lady Fusi replied.

She flew forward, pressed her hand on the ground, and muttered an incantation.

The rectangular box was taken out from the ground.

Gu Qing Shan silently watched this and said: “So he replaced the core of the [Demon King Order], no wonder it got involved in so many tricks and schemes later on”

“Indeed, with these cores still present, we still have hope” Lady Fusi’s gaze was filled with hope.

She carefully carried the rectangular box in her hands.

— that one probably didn’t expect that the entire process of his sabotage was discovered by two people who came from over 10 trillion years in the future.

Lady Fusi opened the box and looked carefully at the treasures inside.

“When you sacrificed the [Demon King Order], it had already obtained the Prayers of countless living beings, it was only because it had to wait for the descent of the Era of [Chaos] that it continued to hide itself” Lady Fusi muttered.

“I’ve always felt it strange, because of how fearful it was— it has clearly evolved into its ultimate form already” Gu Qing Shan added.

Lady Fusi continued: “It had actually been waiting to be taken to the world of the Spire, waiting for the Apotheotic Combat to end”

“Lady Fusi, do you have any solutions?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

Lady Fusi shook her head: “Even though the [Demon King Order] has been altered, it has still gotten involved in numerous events for the next 10 trillion years. If we tried to change it again right now, the history of 10 trillion years would also be changed, we will be affected by the surging current of messed up Causality and killed off”

Gu Qing Shan pondered, then said: “We can simply not touch anything during this period of 10 trillion years, only changing the outcome at the very last moment”

“You mean——”

“Yes, that person had foreseen that the [Demon King Order] will be consumed by the Era of [Chaos], we will make it reality”

Lady Fusi observed him: “Go on”

Gu Qing Shan asked: “Can we somehow utilize these core components and also rig the [Demon King Order], to make sure that everything will happen as it had, only suddenly changing the outcome at the moment that the Apotheotic Combat ends?”

He made a slashing gesture with his hand and continued: “Like an assassin, only striking a single time when it’s most necessary”

Lady Fusi muttered: “Let me think...”

She fell into thought.

A few moments later.

She took out a few Dreamscape Soul Artifacts from the box and put them into the black flames.

Numerous mystical incantations were chanted for dozens of seconds before she finished.

“With my power, I cannot alter this [Order]—— that person also had to bring the preparations of the [Chaos] faction with him in order to change the [Order] we created”

“However, as the old saying goes, destruction is easier than creation”

“And I have a way to destroy all of their preparations”

As she explained, her long hair slowly turned silver-grey, her beautiful appearance gradually became withered and old.

—-even though she altered the [Order] only just a bit, even though she was an Awaiting, she still had to expend a great deal of power.

Gu Qing Shan stopped her from falling.

“It is done”

Lady Fusi tiredly wiped the sweat from her forehead, then handed a Dreamscape Soul Artifact from the box to Gu Qing Shan.

As Gu Qing Shan received it, he saw that it was a Card.

The Card depicted a snow-white unicorn, hanging on the unicorn’s neck was a bright red flute.

A line of glowing text appeared on the War God UI:

[Unique Card: Demon King Descension Master Attachment]

Chapter 1214

With Gu Qing Shan’s help, Lady Fusi leaned on the wall and slowly laid down.

“Time is an eternal mystery, Gu Qing Shan”

She said as she was gasping for breath.

Gu Qing Shan nodded and replied: “I’ve never been able to fully comprehend the truth about time”

“Because it is good at changing”

Lady Fusi continued: “I fully believe that the [Chaos] faction must have spent an untold amount of power in order to find our only moment of carelessness within the lengthy River of Time, or perhaps even——”

“Perhaps even what?” Gu Qing Shan pursued.

Lady Fusi’s expression turned a bit heavy as she slowly explained: “In this secret room of [Order]’s creation, we had arranged countless magical spells and powers to defend it, yet they managed to slip in so easily. I suspect that they might have used the power of the Law of Fate”

“Furthermore, the dark golden sand that the [Chaos] faction used to alter [Order], even I have never seen or heard of such a thing, so it must have been a precious treasure that they spend endless effort to create”

Gu Qing Shan slowly recognized something off in her tone, after a bit of careful thinking, he even felt a slight chill down his back.

“Lady Fusi, what are you worried about?” he asked directly.

Lady Fusi replied: “The war between [Order] and [Chaos] will enter its most crucial moment at the time of the Spire’s destruction. I’m afraid that my old enemy will keep a constant close eye on that period, preparing to stop any unexpected occurrences—— or perhaps even changing its results”

“Haven’t all of the Awaitings fallen into slumber?” Gu Qing Shan asked.

“Both he and I, because we wield the power of Time, we are able to slowly recover our strength through the 10 trillion years¹—— I’m worried that he might have made other preparations” Lady Fusi replied.

She struggled a bit to sit up, then said: “You mustn’t underestimate him and return to the time of the Spire’s destruction right away, ensuring that the ultimate outcome is set in stone”

Gu Qing Shan paused for a second.

“Could there... still be other variables?” he asked.

“It’s hard to say. Anything that hasn’t happened has its own set of variables, especially a great event that will affect the fate of all living beings within the infinite worlds like this”

“I’ve masked your travel through time with the illusion that you’ve disappeared, which should make sure that [Chaos] couldn’t notice——”

Lady Fusi breathed out weakly and continued: “But while we return to this distant past, time had continued to flow since the moment we left”

“I understand that, so we need to go back to the future right away!” Gu Qing Shan urged.

Lady Fusi shook her head and said in a low voice: “The majority of my power has been used to alter [Order], so I no longer have enough strength to send both you and me back at the same time”

“Since I’m an Awaiting, I cannot carry [Order] and [Chaos], so you are our only remaining hope”

She looked at Gu Qing Shan.

Gu Qing Shan’s heart slowly sank.

Lady Fusi went back 10 trillion years, then expended her strength to change [Order], so she had already used up nearly all of her power.

She had already done everything she could.

Now——

Gu Qing Shan looked at the Card in his hand.

The unicorn depicted in the Card was watching him.

“Lady Fusi, leave the rest to me”

Gu Qing Shan said.

Lady Fusi nodded and forced out a smile.

“Gu Qing Shan, you must return right away— before [Chaos] absorbs all the Prayers and awaken the Awaitings on its side, you must change it!”

She used the rest of her strength to push Gu Qing Shan from his shoulder.

The void of space broke open, revealing the grand River of Time within it and swallowed Gu Qing Shan whole.

...

10 trillion years later.

The [Chaos] bronze palace.

Zhang Ying Hao and Ye Ru Xi were both waiting for the results.

All of a sudden, lines of grey text appeared in front of their eyes:

[This Apotheotic Combat trial has been completed]

[The Apotheotic Combat had ended]

[The founding Deity of the Era of Chaos has been decided based on your performance so far]

[Challengers of the Apotheotic Combat are being transported]

The gloomy grey fog then spread through the entire palace as something was about to occur.

Zhang Ying Hao raised his shot glass and finished it all at once.

“Are you nervous?” Ye Ru Xi asked.

“There’s nothing to be nervous about, Ye Fei Li can definitely win. Even if something goes wrong, there’s still Gu Qing Shan, so there won’t be any issues” Zhang Ying Hao pushed his sunglasses up and replied in a seemingly casual tone.

The grey fog continuously surged upwards, from which a figure appeared.

Ye Fei Li.

He was still wearing the Clown mask, his body full of terrible injuries, but his spirit was as refreshed as the bloody bright aura around his body, his presence completely changed.

“Yo, quite sure I won”

The Clown waved his hand towards the other two.

The two of them relaxed a bit.

“Very nice, you’ve grown a lot stronger” Zhang Ying Hao praised.

“Is this Ye Fei Li? Why do I feel like he’s somebody else?” Ye Ru Xi doubtfully asked.

“After donning the mask, he would become a bit different, you’ll understand when you associate with him for long enough”

The grey fog surged again.

The Soul Shrieker emerged from the fog.

「『Laughable fools, it's time for your death』』 it smirked.

The three of them looked at it in shock.

『『I've passed the trial; the Deific Authority will remain mine! After this, I will lead the entire Era of [Chaos] and eradicate you worms!』』 the Soul Shrieker roared.

Zhang Ying Hao and Ye Ru Xi exchanged glances.

Please support our website and read on novelbold

How come both sides said that they've won? Who exactly received the Deity seat of [Chaos]?

At this point, the Clown looked around a bit and doubtfully asked: "Why don't I see Gu Qing Shan and that Raging Flame Traveler?"

A second later, lines of grey text appeared in front of everyone's eyes.

[The Raging Flame Traveler had failed his trial and no longer exist]

[Gu Qing Shan has disappeared]

Zhang Ying Hao crushed the glass in his hand and shouted threateningly: "What do you mean by 'disappeared'?"

Another line of grey text appeared:

[Disappear means he could not be located. There is a possibility that he entered the dreamscape of an Awaiting, ran into an unknown issue, then went somewhere]

Zhang Ying Hao pursued the question: "Then is he dead or alive?"

The grey text continued to appear: [Quite possibly, an Awaiting within their dreamscape absorbed him as nutrient and energy due to his a uniqueness within his constitution]

Zhang Ying Hao froze.

Ye Fei Li froze.

Ye Ru Xi frowned and muttered: “How is that possible?”

The grey text answered: [Such occurrence isn’t unheard of, so judging has been done for the two challengers who managed to return. The final results are as follow:]

[The winner of this Apotheotic Combat]

[Ye Fei Li, Soul Shrieker]

[Both of you have displayed your values within your trials, proving yourselves to be Deities that Chaos need]

[From this moment onwards, you shall split the Deity seat of Chaos among yourselves, becoming the two founding Deities of the Era!]

[Now, you shall be transported back to the location that the Apotheotic Combat was first declared]

Ye Fei Li turned to the Soul Shrieker.

It was to get rid of this monster that Gu Qing Shan is permanently no longer with us.

Damn it.

DAMN IT———

“I refuse, I want to kill it” Ye Fei Li declared as his killing intent boiled.

The entire bronze palace trembled.

Endless grey fog wrapped around Ye Fei Li, Zhang Ying Hao, Ye Ru Xi, and Soul Shrieker, transporting them away.

One breath's worth of time later.

The world of the Spire.

Four clusters of grey fog descended from above, manifesting in front of everyone.

One of the clusters of grey fog was beating another one up.

Ye Fei Li's furious roar could be heard from one of them: "Die! DIE! You damned monster, I don't care about the seat of Deity, I'm going to kill you first!"

The Soul Shrieker was caught off-guard and shouted: 「 『 Ridiculous, you are merely my equal——- 』
』

Fwoom!

The grey fog scattered.

Ye Fei Li and Soul Shrieker were locked in close combat, fighting without regard for anything else.

The ground beneath them crumbled, the sky broke to form numerous black cracks, the residual power from their battle created intense shockwaves that pushed everyone in their vicinity backwards.

Anna observed the changes in the field, then flew up to grab Zhang Ying Hao's arm and asked: "Where's Qing Shan?"

Facing Anna's clear eyes, Zhang Ying Hao lowered his head and replied: "I'm not sure"

“Not sure?”

Anna’s gaze became focused as she grabbed Zhang Ying Hao’s collar with both hands and lowered her voice: “I want to know the truth; you can’t lie do me”

Zhang Ying Hao couldn’t face her directly and sighed: “He— probably—”

Anna felt like her entire body was struck.

She let go, staggering backward.

“No, I don’t believe it”

Two streaks of bloody tears streamed down her pale visage.

Zhang Ying Hao had nothing left to say.

Ye Ru Xi also sighed.

In the sky, Ye Fei Li had already gone berserk and fought the Soul Shrieker without any regards for his own life.

Anna saw it all very clearly.

Everything was pointing to the truth that she didn’t want to admit.

Gu Qing Shan.

Truly wasn't here.

"AAA————"

Anna uttered a long scream.

The boundless miasma of death manifested into intense scorching flames that wrapped her within.

She strongly stabbed her long-handled black scythe into the ground.

Anna hovered in the sky, chanting an incantation with a highly raised tone:

"Power is that greater than life itself"

"The ultimate ending that no living being can restrain"

"The inevitable fate that can never be stopped"

"I am your wielder"

"I, Anna Medici, hereby offer my soul in exchange for the ultimate divine power"

"Law of Death"

"At the final moments of my existence, grant me my final wish"

"I want to avenge him!"

Chapter 1215

The black long-handled scythe silently hovered into the air in front of Anna.

The flames of death and ultimate silence drifted along its body, only waiting for Anna to grab it.

Destruction and vengeance will begin here.

Anna reached her hand forward.

“——Foolish girl”

A cold female voice suddenly resounded in her mind.

Anna paused

This is Su Xue Er's voice.

Is she here?

Immediately, Su Xue Er's voice continued resounding:

“Dummy, if Gu Qing Shan is already dead, how are you still alive? Don't forget about your pendant”

Anna froze.

That's true.

Gu Qing Shan is still carrying the Life-Exchanging Contract, if something truly did happen to him, I would lose my life as well.

Isn't this very simple?

How come I was——

Su Xue Er continued:

“Maintain your anger, don't make any other expressions, just listen to me”

“The Inner Plane's Starlight Empire ultimate research results were combined with Impartial Goddess' own research to create a certain thing—— I'm currently immersed in deep evolution, so I can't come here by myself, having no choice but to bypass Space-Time and connect my brainwaves with yours”

Anna was surprised: “You can send your brainwaves through Space-Time without relying on the power of the three coins?”

“It’s nothing much, if the power of technology couldn’t travel through time, how come other types of power are able to?” Su Xue Er’s voice contained a hint of triumph and pride.

“Anna, I didn’t expect you to actually try to sacrifice your soul. Seeing how you were so impulsive; I have no choice but to step out to prevent you from doing something stupid”

Su Xue Er’s voice became cold again.

“Anna, it’s your turn now, go and help Ye Fei Li win against that monster— remember, don’t sacrifice your soul again, just attack with your full power”

Anna was a bit confused.

—Su Xue Er seems a bit different from how she previously was.

Originally, she shouldn’t have known to be this scheming.

How did she think to use these means and even take advantage of me to achieve her goal?

Her tone is also different from before.

—she seems to be standing at an inexplicable altitude to observe everything that happens in the world of the Spire.

However, all of this is secondary.

The most important thing was that Gu Qing Shan is fine

Anna regained her calm and silently asked: “The Soul Shrieker can’t be killed, what are you planning?”

Su Xue Er replied: “During my deep evolution, thanks to my fourth-dimensional senses, I am able to observe what you are experiencing”

“Although I can’t prevent the Era of [Chaos] from granting the Soul Shrieker its power, we can simply seal it instead of killing it”

“Once you and Ye Fei Li have restrained the Soul Shrieker, I will temporarily halt my evolution and awaken, then throw this guy into a collapsed Space-Time Tomb”

Space-Time Tomb?

Anna silently repeated that word.

Su Xue Er immediately sensed her thoughts and replied: “Yes, it is a branch of the River of Time, but it has already been thoroughly destroyed— even if the Soul Shrieker is the founding Deity of [Chaos], it would never escape from that place”

“Got it” Anna replied.

Dispelling the soul sacrificial technique from before, she held her scythe and turned her gaze to the air.

Ye Fei Li had already gone berserk so he was fighting against the Soul Shrieker with reckless abandon.

The Soul Shrieker roared: 『 「 Despicable, you aren't worthy of becoming a Deity of [Chaos], you're nothing but an insane suicidal bastard! 」 』

It focused the power of Divine Retribution into its hands to attack Ye Fei Li.

Ye Fei Li spat out some fresh blood, then the wings on his back reached forward to attach to his hands and form a pair of razor-sharp claws.

“Ahahaha! I'm also filled with the power of [Chaos] right now, let us see who's more afraid of getting hurt!”

Ye Fei Li laughed maniacally, then charged forward like a rabid dog once more, madly tearing off every bit of the Soul Shrieker he could reach.

The two of them wrestled and spun in the sky, rapidly moving around as they fought. While the others on the battlefield also wanted to attack, they couldn't keep up with their movements at all.

“Ye Fei Li, keep him still for me!”

Anna suddenly shouted.

Ye Fei Li was stunned, then regained his senses.

Although I don't know what Anna is trying to do, since she had asked for it, she surely has some sort of plan.

Ye Fei Li immediately leapt forward, endured the Soul Shrieker's Divine Retribution, then held it tightly without minding the damage.

Anna swung her scythe and flew up.

“Chains of death, shackles of living beings, restrain that thing!”

The scythe scattered into numerous shadows that wrapped around the Soul Shrieker's body.

“Hurry, right at this moment!”

Anna shouted to the void of space.

A cluster of stars descended from above the gloomy grey fog.

These stars gradually converged to form a feminine figure out with their light.

Su Xue Er.

“By my power of fate, break through the wound in Time, let the destroyed isolated branch of the River of Time manifest in this world once more”

She quickly chanted an incantation.

The void of space parted by itself.

A dried up river appeared in front of everyone.

The riverbed was full of filth and destructive power of darkness, simply gazing inside could rouse a heavy sense of breathlessness in one's mind.

「『 No, you can't possibly—— 」』 the Soul Shrieker furiously roared.

Ye Fei Li leapt forward and punched the Soul Shrieker with all his might.

Bam!

The Soul Shrieker was sent flying, unable to alter its course of falling into that dried up branch of the river.

—if it was banished right here, it would be an extremely long time until it could return.

Please support our website and read on novelbold

Although Ye Fei Li was a Deity of [Chaos] as well, he would surely not attempt any destruction.

Ye Ru Xi was the same.

[Order] will earn itself a period of peace and prosperity, leading all living beings to gradually become stronger.

All threats would be dispelled.

“We won!”

Anna clenched her hands.

At this time, something unexpected occurred——

A faint figure appeared in front of the crack in the void of space and pushed their hands inwards.

The crack immediately closed up and collapsed, causing the dried-up riverbed to disappear from their visions as well.

That figure turned to Su Xue Er.

“Since you are deep in slumber at another period in time, you can return to your sleep. Once I’ve dealt with matters here, I’ll eliminate you in the future”

He swung his fist from afar.

Bam!

Su Xue Er’s body of light was instantly destroyed.

The faint figure turned towards Ye Ru Xi.

“This façade is over, Harbinger of Apocalypse’s End, it’s time to accept your historical mission——”

Following his declaration, the grey fog in the sky fully converged.

This grey cluster of fog suddenly became as bright as the sun itself, causing everyone to close their eyes.

“The Prayers of 10 trillion years, finally it is time for you to be used!”

The figure spoke emotionally.

Oom!!!

An overwhelming light descended from the sky to envelop Ye Ru Xi.

“Aaaaahhh, this power— it’s Prayers!”

Ye Ru Xi tried to struggle but was easily caught by the faint figure, unable to move away from this envelopment.

Her expression changed as she shouted in panic: “No! Everyone quickly stop him, don’t allow him to imbue me with more power, otherwise I will summon entities that will destroy everything!”

“I’m currently providing power for the Awaitings!”

In the blink of an eye.

Ye Fei Li and Anna both leapt forward.

The figure merely waved his other hand.

“New Deity of [Chaos], you are everything we have imagined you to be, but you hold unnecessary thoughts in your mind”

“And you, Death God from the Inner Plane, you bunch have always looked down on us outsiders, but your glory was buried by your very own hands; you are nothing but a stray now”

Bam!

Bam!

The sound of two heavy strikes.

The ground trembled.

Ye Fei Li and Anna were both smacked down to the ground, each forming an incredibly deep hole.

“We can’t let him do as he pleases, charge!” Boss declared.

Everyone responded at once.

The faint figure held Ye Ru Xi still with one hand, while his other hand waved down from afar.

“Ah, the heavily injured fallen Abyssal King, and the living beings of this reality, you only need to be patient”

“Very soon, you will witness a decisive historical moment”

An invisible force descended from above, overwhelming everyone present, ensuring that they wouldn’t be able to move.

Even mustering all of his strength, Boss could only slowly move forward one step at a time.

“Greatest Above the Star Crown, I really couldn’t imagine that you’d fall so low, like a dog that can’t even lord over his own fate”

The faint figure slowly stated.

Boss kept silent and continued heading towards the faint figure.

The figure waved his hand again.

Boss was also smacked away, the Firefly of Stars in his hand scattered to the wind.

“How pitiful, Abyssal King, your era has already passed, and now, after 10 trillion years of planning, the end finally approaches. We shall win the right to decide Fate, and there’s nothing you can do about it”

Following the faint figure’s words, the descending light from above grew increasingly more intense.

Ye Ru Xi gradually fell to despair within the light.

She was sobbing as she shouted: “I don’t want to summon them! I don’t want to destroy the world! Why!? Why do I have to accept such a fate!”

The faint figure was now unable to contain his emotions as he replied: “Because this is the day of [Chaos]’s triumph. After all things, all living beings, and everything in between had been destroyed, the infinite worlds will begin anew, and you will be the deciding factor of it all”

Ye Ru Xi’s tears continued to flow.

Unprecedented supernatural phenomena appeared from her body.

The projection of a large bronze gate slowly manifested behind her, then slowly opened.

All of a sudden——

From some unknown location, the sound of a flute resounded.

The descending light suddenly veered away from Ye Ru Xi and instead headed towards a faraway mountain.

A snow-white unicorn was standing on the side of the mountain.

A single man rode on the unicorn, softly playing the flute.

The Prayers of 10 trillion years descended onto him, manifesting the embryonic form of various components and circled around him.

This scene was so extraordinary that everyone couldn't avert their gazes.

The man continued to play the flute, slowly moving towards the battlefield.

In front of his eyes, a line of glowing text quickly appeared:

[Attention, the Demon King is about to attach itself to you and descend on this world]